# RICCI DEFORMATION OF THE METRIC <br> ON COMPLETE NONCOMPACT RIEMANNIAN MANIFOLDS 

## WAN-XIONG SHI

## 1. Main result

Suppose $\left(M, g_{i j}\right)$ is an $n$-dimensional complete Riemannian manifold with metric

$$
d s^{2}=g_{i j} d x^{i} d x^{j}>0
$$

It is well known that the curvature tensor $\mathrm{Rm}=\left\{R_{i j k l}\right\}$ can be decomposed into the orthogonal components which have the same symmetries as Rm :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Rm}=W+V+U \quad \text { or } \quad R_{i j k l}=W_{i j k l}+V_{i j k l}+U_{i j k l} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $W=\left\{W_{i j k l}\right\}$ is the Weyl conformal curvature tensor, and $V=$ $\left\{V_{i j k l}\right\}$ and $U=\left\{U_{i j k l}\right\}$ denote the traceless Ricci part and the scalar curvature part respectively.

We know that the Ricci curvature is

$$
R_{i j}=g^{k l} R_{i k j l}
$$

and the scalar curvature is

$$
R=g^{i j} R_{i j}=g^{i j} g^{k l} R_{i k j l}
$$

Under these notations we can write $U, V, W$ as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{i j k l} & =\frac{1}{n(n-1)} R\left(g_{i k} g_{j l}-g_{i l} g_{j k}\right) \\
V_{i j k l} & =\frac{1}{n-2}\left(\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i k} g_{j l}-\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i l} g_{j k}-\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{j k} g_{i l}+\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{j l} g_{i k}\right)  \tag{2}\\
W_{i j k l} & =\stackrel{R}{i j k l}-V_{i j k l}-W_{i j k l}
\end{align*}
$$

here $\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j}=R_{i j}-\frac{1}{n} g_{i j}$.
If we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}=\left\{\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l}\right\}=\left(R_{i j k l}-U_{i j k l}\right)=\left(V_{i j k l}+W_{i j k l}\right), \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^0]then
\[

$$
\begin{align*}
& |\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}=\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R_{i j k l}}\right|^{2}=\left|W_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\left|V_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& \left|U_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=\frac{2}{n(n-1)} R^{2}  \tag{4}\\
& |\mathrm{Rm}|^{2}=\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}+\left|U_{i j k l}\right|^{2}
\end{align*}
$$
\]

Now suppose $M$ is a complete noncompact Riemannian manifold of dimension $n$. Fix a point $x_{0} \in M$, and for any $x \in M$ let $\gamma\left(x_{0}, x\right)$ denote the distance between $x_{0}$ and $x$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(x, \gamma)=\{y \in M \mid \gamma(x, y)<\gamma\} \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the geodesic ball. Then we can state the main result of this paper as follows.

Main Theorem. Let $M$ be an n-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold, $n \geq 3$. For any $c_{1}, c_{2}>0$ and $\delta>0$, there exists a constant $\varepsilon=\varepsilon\left(n, c_{1}, c_{2}, \delta\right)>0$ such that if the curvature of $M$ satisfies:
(A) $\operatorname{Vol}(B(x, \gamma)) \geq c_{1} \gamma^{n}, \forall x \in M, \gamma \geq 0$, and
(B) $|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} \leq \varepsilon R^{2}, 0<R \leq c_{2} / \gamma\left(x_{0}, x\right)^{2+\delta} \forall x \in M$,
then the evolution equation

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(t)=-2 R_{i j}(t) \\
g_{i j}(0)=g_{i j}
\end{array}\right.
$$

has a solution for all time $0 \leq t<+\infty$ and the metric $g_{i j}(t)$ converges to a smooth metric $g_{i j}(\infty)$ as time $t \rightarrow+\infty$ such that $R_{i j k l}(\infty) \equiv 0$ on $M$.

## 2. Notation and conventions

The notation we are going to use in this paper is basically the same as the notation used by Hamilton in [6].

We denote vectors as $V^{i}$, covectors as $V_{j}$, and mixed tensors as $T_{k l m}^{i j}$ etc. The summation convention will always hold. For the Riemannian metric $g_{i j}$, we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(g^{i j}\right)=\left(g_{i j}\right)^{-1} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Levi-Civita connection is given by the Christoffel symbols

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma_{i j}^{k}=\frac{1}{2} g^{k l}\left(\frac{\partial g_{i l}}{\partial x^{j}}+\frac{\partial g_{j l}}{\partial x^{i}}-\frac{\partial g_{i j}}{\partial x^{l}}\right) \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the Riemannian curvature tensor is

$$
\begin{gather*}
R_{i j k}^{l}=\frac{\partial}{\partial x^{i}} \Gamma_{j k}^{l}-\frac{\partial}{\partial x^{j}} \Gamma_{i k}^{l}+\Gamma_{i p}^{l} \Gamma_{j k}^{p}-\Gamma_{j p}^{l} \Gamma_{i k}^{p},  \tag{3}\\
R_{i j k l}=g_{p k} R_{i j l}^{k} . \tag{4}
\end{gather*}
$$

We denote the covariant derivatives of a vector $V^{j}$ and a covector $V_{j}$ respectively by

$$
\begin{gather*}
\nabla_{i} V^{j}=\frac{\partial}{\partial x^{i}} V^{j}+\Gamma_{i k}^{j} V^{k},  \tag{5}\\
\nabla_{i} V_{j}=\frac{\partial}{\partial x^{i}} V_{j}-\Gamma_{i j}^{k} V_{k} . \tag{6}
\end{gather*}
$$

This definition extends uniquely to tensors so as to preserve the product rule and contractions. For the interchange of two covariant derivatives we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V_{k}-\nabla_{j} \nabla_{i} V_{k}=g^{p q} R_{i j k p} V_{q} . \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any tensors such as $\left\{S_{i j k l}\right\}$ and $\left\{T_{i j k l}\right\}$, we have the inner product

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle S_{i j k l}, T_{i j k l}\right\rangle=g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} g^{k \gamma} g^{l \delta} S_{i j k l} T_{\alpha \beta \gamma \delta}, \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the norm of $\left\{T_{i j k l}\right\}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|T_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=\left\langle T_{i j k l}, T_{i j k l}\right\rangle . \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use $\operatorname{inj}(M)$ to denote the injectivity radius of $M$.

## 3. Evolution equation and the short time existence of the solution

For any $n$-dimensional Riemannian manifold $M$ with metric

$$
\begin{equation*}
d s^{2}=g_{i j} d x^{i} d x^{j}>0, \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

consider the heat flow equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}=-2 R_{i j} \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

on $M$. We want to find the evolution equations for the curvature tensor and its covariant derivatives; we need these evolution equations in this paper.

Lemma 3.1. If the metric $g_{i j}(t)$ satisfies the evolution equation (2), then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R_{i j k l}= & \Delta R_{i j k l}+2\left(B_{i j k l}-B_{i j l k}-B_{i l j k}+B_{i k j l}\right) \\
& -g^{p q}\left(R_{p j k l} R_{q i}+R_{i p k l} R_{q j}+R_{i j p l} R_{q k}+R_{i j k p} R_{q l}\right), \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R_{i j}= & \Delta R_{i j}+2 R_{p i q j} R^{p q}-2 g^{p q} R_{p i} R_{q j},  \tag{3}\\
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t}= & \Delta R+2 g^{i k} g^{j l} R_{i j} R_{k l}=\Delta R+2 S
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gather*}
B_{i j k l}=g^{p y} g^{q s} R_{p i q j} R_{\gamma k s l},  \tag{4}\\
R^{p q}=g^{p i} g^{g j} R_{i j},  \tag{5}\\
S=\left|R_{i j}\right|^{2}=g^{i k} g^{j l} R_{i j} R_{k l} . \tag{6}
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. See Hamilton [6].
If $A$ and $B$ are two tensors, we write $A * B$ for the linear combination of terms formed by contraction on $A_{i \cdots j} B_{k \cdots l}$ using the $g^{i k}$, and write $\nabla^{m} A$ for the $m$ th covariant derivatives of $A$ with respect to the metric $g_{i j}$. Then we have the following lemma.

Lemma 3.2. If the metric $g_{i j}(t)$ satisfies the evolution equation (2), then for any integer $m \geq 0$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm} & =\Delta\left(\nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm}\right)+\sum_{i+j=m} \nabla^{i} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm}\right|^{2}= & \Delta\left|\nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm}\right|^{2}-2\left|\nabla^{m+1} \mathrm{Rm}\right|^{2}  \tag{7}\\
& +\sum_{i+j=m} \nabla^{i} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. This is Theorem 13.2 and Corollary 13.3 in Hamilton [6].
Lemma 3.3. Suppose ( $M, g_{i j}$ ) is a noncompact complete n-dimensional Riemannian manifold with sectional curvature $0<R_{i j i j} \leq k_{0}$. Then the injectivity radius of $M$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{inj}(M) \geq \pi / \sqrt{k_{0}} \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. This is a well-known fact. Actually one can use the arguments of [2] to prove this lemma. For example, use Lemma 5.6 and Corollary 5.7 in [2].

The following short time existence theorem for the evolution equation (2) is a special case of the theorem proved in [12].

Theorem 3.4. Suppose $\left(M, g_{i j}(x)\right)$ is an n-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with its sectional curvature satisfying $0<$ $R_{i j i j} \leq k_{0}$. Then there exists a constant $T_{0}=T_{0}\left(n, k_{0}\right)>0$ depending only on $n$ and $k_{0}$ such that the evolution equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}(x, t), \quad g_{i j}(x, 0)=g_{i j}(x) \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a smooth solution $g_{i j}(x, t)>0$ on $0 \leq t \leq T_{0}$ and satisfies the following estimates: For any integer $m \geq 0$, there exist constants
$c_{m+1}=c_{m+1}\left(n, k_{0}\right)>0$ depending only on $n$ and $k_{0}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{M}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{m+1} / t^{m}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0} \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The sectional curvature of $M$ satisfies $0<R_{i j i j} \leq k_{0}$. By using formula (1.10) of [2] we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq 100 n^{4} k_{0}^{2} \quad \text { on } M . \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus from Theorem 1.1 of [12] it follows that the theorem is true.

## 4. Maximal principle of the heat equation on noncompact manifolds

In the case where $M$ is a compact Riemannian manifold, the maximal principle of the heat equation on $M$ is easy to prove, just as Hamilton did in [6].

In the case where $M$ is a noncompact complete Riemannian manifold, the maximal principle for the parabolic heat equation on $M$ is much more complicated and is not always true except if we make some curvature assumption on $M$ and some growth assumption of the solution near the infinite of $M$. The proof of such maximal principles is not so easy; for details we refer the reader to the papers of D. G. Aronson [1], H. Donnelly [5], L. Karp and P. Li [9], P. Li and S. T. Yau [10], and M. H. Protter and H. F. Weinberger [11].

Let $\left(M, g_{i j}(x)\right)$ be an $n$-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with its sectional curvature satisfying

$$
0<R_{i j i j} \leq k_{0}
$$

Then from Theorem 3.4 in $\S 3$ we can find a metric

$$
d s^{2}=g_{i j}(x, t) d x^{i} d x^{j}>0 \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]
$$

such that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}(x, t), \\
g_{i j}(x, 0) \equiv g_{i j}(x),
\end{array} \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T_{0}\right.
$$

and

$$
\sup _{M}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{m+1} / t^{m}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0}, m \geq 0
$$

If $m=1$, we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} & \leq c_{2} / t, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T_{0}  \tag{1}\\
\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right| & \leq c_{2}^{1 / 2} / \sqrt{t}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T_{0} \tag{2}
\end{align*}
$$

thus

$$
\begin{gather*}
\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right| d t \leq c_{2}^{1 / 2} \int_{0}^{T_{0}} d t / \sqrt{t}=2 \sqrt{T_{0} c_{2}}, \quad x \in M  \tag{3}\\
\sup _{x \in M} \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right| d t \leq 2 \sqrt{T_{0} c_{2}}<+\infty
\end{gather*}
$$

In this section we make the following assumption.
Assumption A. $M$ is an $n$-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with respect to the metric

$$
d s^{2}=g_{i j}(x, t) d x^{i} d x^{j}>0
$$

on $C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$, where $0<T<+\infty$ is some constant such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{4}\\
& 0<R_{i j i j}(x, 0) \leq k_{0}, \quad x \in M \\
& \left|R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{1}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T  \tag{5}\\
& \int_{0}^{T}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right| d t \leq c_{2}, \quad x \in M
\end{align*}
$$

where $0<c_{1}, c_{2}<+\infty$ are two constants.
Under Assumption A, we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
d s_{t}^{2}=g_{i j}(x, t) d x^{i} d x^{j}>0, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and use $\nabla$ or $\nabla^{t}$ to denote the connection of $d s_{t}^{2}, \Delta$ or $\Delta_{t}$ the Laplacian operator of $d s_{t}^{2}$, and $\gamma_{t}(x, y)$ the distance between $x$ and $y$ with respect to metric $d s_{t}^{2}$ for any two points $x, y \in M$.

Lemma 4.1. Under Assumption A, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& e^{-2 \sqrt{n c_{1} t}} d s_{0}^{2} \leq d s_{t}^{2} \leq e^{2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t} d s_{0}^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \\
& e^{-\sqrt{n c_{1}} t} \gamma_{0}(x, y) \leq \gamma_{t}(x, y) \leq e^{\sqrt{n c_{1}} t} \gamma_{0}(x, y), \quad x \in M, y \in M \tag{7}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus for each $t, 0 \leq t \leq T, d s_{t}^{2}$ is equivalent to $d s_{0}^{2}$.
Proof. Since

$$
\left|R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{1} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq n c_{1} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus from

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}(x, t)
$$

it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)\right| \leq 2\left|R_{i j}(x, t)\right| \leq 2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
-2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} g_{i j}(x, t) \leq \frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t) \leq 2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} g_{i j}(x, t) \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now have

$$
\begin{gather*}
e^{-2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t} g_{i j}(x, 0) \leq g_{i j}(x, t) \leq e^{2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t} g_{i j}(x, 0),  \tag{11}\\
e^{-2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t} d s_{0}^{2} \leq d s_{t}^{2} \leq e^{2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t} d s_{0}^{2} \tag{12}
\end{gather*}
$$

Using (12) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-\sqrt{n c_{1}} t} \gamma_{0}(x, y) \leq \gamma_{t}(x, y) \leq e^{\sqrt{n c_{1}} t} \gamma_{0}(x, y) \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $x, y \in M$, and this completes the proof of Lemma 4.1.
In particular, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
e^{-2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} T} g_{i j}(x, 0) \leq g_{i j}(x, t) \leq e^{2 \sqrt{n c_{1}} T} g_{i j}(x, 0),  \tag{14}\\
e^{-T \sqrt{n c_{1}}} \gamma_{0}(x, y) \leq \gamma_{t}(x, y) \leq e^{T \sqrt{n c_{1}}} \gamma_{0}(x, y)
\end{gather*}
$$

for $0 \leq t \leq T$ and $x, y \in M$.
Lemma 4.2. Under Assumption A, for a fixed point $x_{0} \in M$, we can find a function $\psi(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& c_{3}\left\{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right\} \leq \psi(x) \leq c_{4}\left\{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right\} \\
& \left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \psi(x)\right|^{2} \leq c_{5}  \tag{15}\\
& \nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi(x) \leq c_{5} g_{i j}(x, 0)
\end{align*}
$$

for all $x \in M$, where $c_{3}, c_{4}$, and $c_{5}$ are some positive constants.
Proof. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x)=1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right), \quad x \in M . \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then at the smooth point of $\varphi(x)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \varphi(x)\right| \leq 1 \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we compare $\varphi(x)$ with the distance function on $\mathbf{R}^{n}$ with respect to standard Euclidean metric, then, by using the Hessian comparison theorem in Riemannian geometry, we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{\xi}^{0} \nabla_{\xi}^{0} \varphi(x) \leq \frac{1}{\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)} \quad \text { for any } \xi \in T_{x} M,|\xi|^{2}=1 \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

because by Assumption A

$$
0<R_{i j i j}(x, 0) \leq k_{0}, \quad x \in M
$$

From (18) it follows that at the smooth point of $\varphi(x)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \varphi(x) \leq \frac{1}{\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)} g_{i j}(x, 0), \quad x \in M \tag{19}
\end{equation*}
$$

The problem is $\varphi(x)$ may not be smooth at some points of $M$.
We choose a cut-off function $\chi(x) \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\mathbf{R})$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
0 \leq \chi(x) \leq 1 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R} \\
\chi(x) \equiv 0 \quad \text { if } x \notin[-1,2] \\
\chi(x) \equiv 1 \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1  \tag{20}\\
\left|\chi^{\prime}(x)\right| \leq 2 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R} \\
\left|\chi^{\prime \prime}(x)\right| \leq 8 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R},
\end{gather*}
$$

and set

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha(x, y)=\chi\left(\frac{\gamma_{0}(x, y)}{\sqrt{k_{0}}}\right) \quad \forall x, y \in M . \tag{21}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Assumption A we have

$$
0<R_{i j i j}(x, 0) \leq k_{0}, \quad x \in M
$$

Thus we know, from Lemma 3.3, that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{inj}(M) \geq \pi / \sqrt{k_{0}} \tag{22}
\end{equation*}
$$

with respect to metric $d s_{0}^{2}$, and, from (20) and (21), that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha(x, y) \in C^{\infty}(M \times M) \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we can use the so-called mollifier technique to modify $\varphi(x)$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x)=\int_{M} \alpha(x, y) \varphi(y) d y, \quad x \in M \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x)=\int_{M} \chi\left(\frac{\gamma_{0}(x, y)}{\sqrt{k_{0}}}\right) \psi(y) d y, \quad x \in M \tag{25}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (23) we know that $\psi(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$, and from (17), (19), and (20) we know that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& c_{3}\left\{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right\} \leq \psi(x) \leq c_{4}\left\{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right\} \\
& \left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \psi(x)\right|^{2} \leq c_{5}, \quad x \in M \\
& \nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi(x) \leq c_{5} g_{i j}(x, 0)
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence the proof of Lemma 4.2 is complete.

Lemma 4.3. For $\psi(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$, which was found in Lemma 4.2, there exists a constant $c_{6}=c_{6}(T)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{t} \psi \leq c_{6} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. For any $0 \leq t \leq T$ and $x \in M$, we want to compute $\Delta_{t} \psi(x)$ at $x$. Choose a coordinate system such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial g_{i j}(x, 0)}{\partial x^{k}}=0 \quad \text { at } x \tag{27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma_{i j}^{k}=\frac{1}{2} g^{k \gamma}\left(\frac{\partial g_{j \gamma}}{\partial x^{i}}+\frac{\partial g_{i \gamma}}{\partial x^{j}}-\frac{\partial g_{i j}}{\partial x^{\gamma}}\right) \tag{28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, by the definition of covariant derivative, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \nabla_{i}^{t} \psi(x)=\frac{\partial \psi(x)}{\partial x^{i}} \\
& \nabla_{i}^{t} \nabla_{j}^{t} \psi(x)=\frac{\partial^{2} \psi(x)}{\partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}}-\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t) \frac{\partial \psi(x)}{\partial x^{k}}  \tag{29}\\
& \Delta_{t} \psi(x)=g^{i j}(x, t) \frac{\partial^{2} \psi}{\partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}}-g^{i j}(x, t) \Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t) \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x^{k}}
\end{align*}
$$

Since by (27),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)=0 \tag{30}
\end{equation*}
$$

we have $\nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi(x)=\partial^{2} \psi(x) / \partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}$.
From Lemma 4.2 we know that

$$
\begin{align*}
& g^{i j}(x, 0) \frac{\partial \psi(x)}{\partial x^{i}} \cdot \frac{\partial \psi(x)}{\partial x^{j}} \leq c_{5} \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi(x)}{\partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}} \leq c_{5} g_{i j}(x, 0) \tag{31}
\end{align*}
$$

which together with (14) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{i j}(x, t) \frac{\partial^{2} \psi(x)}{\partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}} \leq c_{5} g^{i j}(x, t) g_{i j}(x, 0) \leq c_{5} n e^{2 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}} \tag{32}
\end{equation*}
$$

For each $t,\left[\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t)-\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)\right]$ is a tensor on $M$. Define

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, t)= & g^{i \alpha}(x, t) g^{j \beta}(x, t) g_{k \gamma}(x, t) g_{k \gamma}(x, t)\left[\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t)-\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)\right] \\
& \cdot\left[\Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}(x, t)-\Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}(x, 0)\right] . \tag{33}
\end{align*}
$$

Then $u(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$.

Since $\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)=0$ at $x$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& u(x, t)=g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} g_{k \gamma} \Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t) \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}(x, t)  \tag{34}\\
& \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial t}= 2 \frac{\partial g^{i \alpha}}{\partial t} g^{j \beta} g_{k \gamma} \Gamma_{i j}^{k} \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}+g^{i \alpha} g^{i \beta} \frac{\partial g_{k \gamma}}{\partial t} \Gamma_{i j}^{k} \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}  \tag{35}\\
&+2 g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} g_{k \gamma} \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Gamma_{i j}^{k} .
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}=-2 R_{i j}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g^{i j}=2 g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} R_{\alpha \beta} \tag{36}
\end{equation*}
$$

and from (28) it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Gamma_{i j}^{k}= & \frac{1}{2} g^{k \gamma}\left[\nabla_{i}\left(\frac{\partial g_{j \gamma}}{\partial t}\right)+\nabla_{j}\left(\frac{\partial g_{i \gamma}}{\partial t}\right)-\nabla_{\gamma}\left(\frac{\partial g_{i j}}{\partial t}\right)\right] \\
= & g^{k \gamma}\left(\nabla_{\gamma}^{t} R_{i j}-\nabla_{i}^{t} R_{j \gamma}-\nabla_{j}^{t} R_{i \gamma}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Gamma_{i j}^{k}=g^{k \gamma}\left(\nabla_{\gamma} R_{i j}-\nabla_{i} R_{j \gamma}-\nabla_{j} R_{i \gamma}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting (36) and (37) into (35) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial t}= & 4 g^{i \sigma} g^{\alpha \tau} R_{\sigma \tau} g^{j \beta} g_{k \gamma} \Gamma_{i j}^{k} \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}-2 g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} R_{k \gamma} \Gamma_{i j}^{k} \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}  \tag{38}\\
& +2 g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} g_{k \gamma} \Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma} g^{k l}\left(\nabla_{l} R_{i j}-\nabla_{i} R_{j l}-\nabla_{j} R_{i l}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

By (8) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} u(x, t) \leq 6 \sqrt{n c_{1}}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|^{2}+6\left|\Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}\right|\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right| \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|^{2}=u(x, t)$. Thus

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|^{2} \leq 6 \sqrt{n c_{1}}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|^{2}+6\left|\Gamma_{\alpha \beta}^{\gamma}\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|, \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right| \leq 3 \sqrt{n c_{1}}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|+3\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right| \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(e^{-3 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|\right) \leq 3 e^{-3 \sqrt{n c_{1} t}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right| \leq 3\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|,
\end{gathered}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{aligned}
e^{-3 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|-\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)\right| & =\int_{0}^{t} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[e^{-3 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right|\right] d t \\
& \leq 3 \int_{0}^{t}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right| d t \leq 3 \int_{0}^{T}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right| d t \\
& \leq 3 n \int_{0}^{T}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}\right| d t
\end{aligned}
$$

which together with (5) gives

$$
e^{-3 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t}\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t)\right|-\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)\right| \leq 3 n c_{2}
$$

Then by definition (33) we have

$$
\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, 0)\right| \equiv 0 \quad \text { on } M
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t)\right| \leq 3 n c_{2} e^{3 \sqrt{n c_{1}} t} \leq 3 n c_{2} e^{3 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}} \\
\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t)\right| \leq 3 n c_{2} e^{3 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{40}
\end{gather*}
$$

By (14) and (31) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{i j}(x, t) \frac{\partial \psi(x)}{\partial x^{i}} \frac{\partial \psi(x)}{\partial x^{j}} \leq c_{5} e^{2 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}} \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{i}^{t} \psi(x)\right|^{2} \leq c_{5} e^{2 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (40) and (42) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
-g^{i j}(x, t) \Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t) \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x^{k}} & \leq n\left|\Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t)\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{k}^{t} \psi(x)\right|  \tag{43}\\
& \leq 3 n^{2} c_{2} c_{5} e^{5 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}
\end{align*}
$$

which together with (32) gives

$$
g^{i j}(x, t) \frac{\partial^{2} \psi}{\partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}}-g^{i j}(x, t) \Gamma_{i j}^{k}(x, t) \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x^{k}} \leq c_{5} n e^{2 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}+3 n^{2} c_{2} c_{5} e^{5 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}
$$

Let $c_{6}=c_{5} n e^{2 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}+3 n^{2} c_{2} c_{5} e^{5 T \sqrt{n c_{1}}}$. Then from (29) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{t} \psi(x) \leq c_{6}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 4.4. Under Assumption $\mathbf{A}$, for any $c_{7}>0$ we can find a constant $c_{8}>0$ and a function

$$
\theta(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])
$$

such that the following are true:

$$
\begin{align*}
0 & <\theta(x, t) \leq 1 \quad \forall(x, t) \in M \times[0, T],  \tag{45}\\
\frac{c_{8}^{-1}}{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)} & \leq \theta(x, t) \leq \frac{c_{8}}{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T, \\
\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} & \leq \Delta \theta-\frac{2\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}}{\theta}-c_{7} \theta \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. From Lemma 4.3 we know that

$$
\Delta_{t} \psi(x) \leq c_{6}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\xi(x, t)=e^{c_{7} t}\left\{\psi(x)+c_{6} t\right\}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{48}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \xi}{\partial t}=c_{7} e^{c_{7} t}\left\{\psi(x)+c_{6} t\right\}+c_{6} e^{c_{7} t}, \\
& \frac{\partial \xi}{\partial t}=c_{7} \xi+c_{6} e^{c_{7} t}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{49}
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\Delta \xi=e^{c_{7} t} \Delta\left\{\psi(x)+c_{6} t\right\}=e^{c_{7} t} \Delta \psi \leq c_{6} e^{c_{7} t},
$$

from (49) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \xi}{\partial t} \geq \Delta \xi+c_{7} \xi \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{50}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (48) we get

$$
\psi(x) \leq \xi(x, t) \leq e^{c_{7} T} \psi(x)+e^{c_{7} T} \cdot c_{6} T,
$$

and therefore, in consequence of (15),

$$
\begin{align*}
& c_{3}\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right] \leq \psi(x) \leq \xi(x, t)  \tag{51}\\
& \leq e^{c_{7} T} \cdot c_{4}\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]+c_{6} T e^{c_{7} T} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T], \\
& c_{3}\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right] \leq \xi(x, t) \leq\left(c_{4} e^{c_{7} T}+c_{6} T e^{c_{7} T}\right)\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right] \\
& \text { on } M \times[0, T] .
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\theta}(x, t)=\frac{1}{\xi(x, t)} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{52}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\theta}}{\partial t} & =-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \frac{\partial \xi}{\partial t} \leq-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}}\left[\Delta \xi+c_{7} \xi\right] \\
& =-\frac{\Delta \xi}{\xi^{2}}-\frac{c_{7}}{\xi}=\Delta \tilde{\theta}-\frac{2}{\tilde{\theta}}\left|\nabla_{p} \tilde{\theta}\right|^{2}-c_{7} \tilde{\theta} \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\theta}}{\partial t} & \leq \Delta \tilde{\theta}-\frac{2}{\tilde{\theta}}\left|\nabla_{p} \tilde{\theta}\right|^{2}-c_{7} \tilde{\theta} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{53}
\end{align*}
$$

From (51) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{c_{3}\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]} \geq \tilde{\theta}(x, t) \geq \frac{1}{\left(c_{4} e^{c_{7} T}+c_{6} T e^{c_{7} T}\right)\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]} \tag{54}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular,

$$
\tilde{\theta}(x, t) \leq \frac{1}{c_{3}} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta(x, t)=c_{3} \tilde{\theta}(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{55}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $0<\theta(x, t) \leq 1$ on $M \times[0, T]$.
From (53) we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} \leq \Delta \theta-\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-c_{7} \theta \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{56}\\
\frac{c_{3}}{\left(c_{4}+c_{6} T\right) e^{c_{7} T}\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]} \leq \theta(x, t) \leq \frac{1}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]} \tag{57}
\end{gather*}
$$

Choose $c_{8}>0$ such that

$$
c_{8} \geq 1+\frac{c_{4}+c_{6} T}{c_{3}} e^{c_{7} T}
$$

Then (45), (46), and (47) are true.
Now we are going to prove the following maximal principle on noncompact manifold $M$.

Lemma 4.5. Under Assumption A, suppose $\varphi(x, t)$ is a $C^{\infty}$ function on $M \times[0, T]$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{cl}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t) & \text { on } M \times[0, T] \\
|\varphi(x, t)| \leq C 9<+\infty & \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{58}\\
\varphi(x, 0) \leq 0 & \text { on } M \\
Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq 0 & \text { for } \varphi \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{59}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. If this lemma is not true, then we can find some $\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right) \in M \times$ $[0, T]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)>0 . \tag{60}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose $\theta(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$ is the function obtained in Lemma 4.4, and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)=\theta(x, t) \varphi(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{61}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $0<\theta(x, t) \leq 1$ and $|\varphi(x, t)| \leq c_{9}$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
|\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)| \leq c_{9} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{62}\\
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)=\theta\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right) \varphi\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)>0 \tag{63}
\end{gather*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha=\sup _{M \times[0, T]} \tilde{\varphi}(x, t) . \tag{64}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then from (62) and (63) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\alpha \leq c_{9} \tag{65}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{gather*}
|\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)|=\theta(x, t)|\varphi(x, t)| \leq c_{9} \theta(x, t) \leq \frac{c_{8} c_{9}}{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)}, \\
|\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)| \leq \frac{c_{8} c_{9}}{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{66}
\end{gather*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=\left\{x \in M \mid \gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right) \leq c_{8} c_{9} / \alpha\right\} \tag{67}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $D \subseteq M$ is a compact subset.
If $(x, t) \notin D \times[0, T]$, then $\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)>\alpha^{-1} c_{8} c_{9}$. From (66) we know that

$$
|\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)|<\alpha \quad \text { for }(x, t) \notin D \times[0, T] .
$$

Since $D \times[0, T]$ is a compact set, we can find a point $\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \in D \times[0, T]$ such that $\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\alpha$, so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\sup _{M \times[0, T]} \tilde{\varphi}(x, t)>0 . \tag{68}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \geq 0,  \tag{69}\\
& \Delta \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq 0  \tag{70}\\
& \nabla \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=0 \tag{71}
\end{align*}
$$

where (69) comes from the fact that $\tilde{\varphi}(x, 0)=\theta(x, 0) \varphi(x, 0) \leq 0$. Therefore we always have $t_{1}>0$.

From (58) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\theta \varphi)=\theta \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}+\varphi \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} \\
= & \theta[\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t)]+\varphi \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} \\
= & \theta \Delta \varphi+\varphi \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t) \\
= & \Delta(\theta \varphi)-2 \nabla_{k} \theta \cdot \nabla_{k} \varphi-\varphi \Delta \theta+\varphi \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t) \\
= & \Delta \tilde{\varphi}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{k} \theta \cdot \nabla_{k}(\theta \varphi)+\frac{2 \varphi}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{k} \theta\right|^{2} \\
& -\varphi \Delta \theta+\varphi \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t) \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}= & \Delta \tilde{\varphi}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{k} \theta \cdot \nabla_{k} \tilde{\varphi}+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t)  \tag{72}\\
& +\left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}-\Delta \theta+\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{k} \theta\right|^{2}\right) \varphi
\end{align*}
$$

Let $(x, t)=\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)$. Then from (68) we get

$$
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\theta\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)>0 .
$$

Since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)>0, \tag{73}
\end{equation*}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)>0, \tag{74}
\end{equation*}
$$

and, in consequence of (58),

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq 0 . \tag{75}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $c_{7}=1$ in Lemma 4.4. Then

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} \leq \Delta \theta-\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{k} \theta\right|^{2}-\theta \\
\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}-\Delta \theta+\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{k} \theta\right|^{2} \leq-\theta \tag{76}
\end{gather*}
$$

From (73) and (75) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \cdot Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq 0 \tag{77}
\end{equation*}
$$

and (74) together with (76) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}-\Delta \theta+\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{k} \theta\right|^{2}\right) \varphi \leq-\theta \varphi=-\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) . \tag{78}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (70), (71), (77), and (78) into (72), we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq-\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0, \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0 . \tag{79}
\end{gather*}
$$

Since (79) contradicts (69), we have

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Theorem 4.6. Under Assumption A, suppose $\varphi(x, t)$ is a $C^{\infty}$ function on $M \times[0, T]$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi+c_{10}\left|\nabla_{k} \varphi\right|^{2}+Q(\varphi, x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \\
\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{9}<+\infty \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{80}\\
\varphi(x, 0) \leq 0 \text { on } M \\
Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq c_{11} \varphi \text { for } \varphi \geq 0
\end{gather*}
$$

where $0<c_{9}, c_{10}, c_{11}<+\infty$ are some constants. Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{81}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(x, t)=e^{-\beta t}\left[e^{c_{10} \varphi(x, t)}-1\right] \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{82}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\beta>0$ is a constant to be determined later. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}= & -\beta w+e^{-\beta t} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} e^{c_{10} \varphi(x, t)} \\
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}= & -\beta w+c_{10} e^{-\beta t} e^{c_{10} \varphi(x, t)} \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t} \\
= & -\beta w+c_{10} e^{-\beta t} e^{c_{10} \varphi}\left[\Delta \varphi+c_{10}\left|\nabla_{k} \varphi\right|^{2}+Q(\varphi, x, t)\right] \\
= & -\beta w+e^{-\beta t} \Delta e^{c_{10} \varphi}+c_{10} e^{-\beta t} e^{c_{10} \varphi} Q(\varphi, x, t) \\
& \frac{\partial w}{\partial t}=\Delta w-\beta w+c_{10} e^{-\beta t} e^{c_{10} \varphi} Q(\varphi, x, t) \tag{83}
\end{align*}
$$

If $w(x, t) \geq 0$, from (82) it follows that $\varphi(x, t) \geq 0$. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq c_{11} \varphi(x, t) \tag{84}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{9}<+\infty$, we can find a constant $\delta>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \leq \delta\left[e^{c_{10} \varphi(x, t)}-1\right] \text { for } 0 \leq \varphi(x, t) \leq c_{9}, \tag{85}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (84) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
c_{10} e^{-\beta t} e^{c_{10 \varphi}} Q(\varphi, x, t) & \leq c_{10} c_{11} \delta e^{c_{10} \varphi} e^{-\beta t}\left(e^{c_{10} \varphi}-1\right) \\
& =c_{10} c_{11} \delta e^{c_{10} \varphi} w \leq c_{10} c_{11} \delta e^{c_{10} c_{9}} w . \tag{86}
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{Q}(w, x, t)=-\beta w+c_{10} e^{-\beta t} e^{c_{10} \varphi} Q(\varphi, x, t) . \tag{87}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}=\Delta w+\tilde{Q}(w, x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{88}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $w(x, t) \geq 0$, from (86) we get

$$
\tilde{Q}(w, x, t) \leq\left[c_{10} c_{11} \delta e^{c_{10} c_{9}}-\beta\right] w .
$$

Choose

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta=c_{10} c_{11} \delta e^{c_{10} c_{9}} ; \tag{89}
\end{equation*}
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{Q}(w, x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { for } w \geq 0 . \tag{90}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\varphi(x, 0) \leq 0$, from (82) it follows that

$$
\begin{gather*}
w(x, 0) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M,  \tag{91}\\
-1 \leq w(x, t) \leq e^{c_{10} c_{9}}-1 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T],
\end{gather*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|w(x, t)| \leq e^{c_{10} c g} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{92}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (88), (90), (91), (92) and Lemma 4.5 we get

$$
w(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T],
$$

so that, in consequence of (82),

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] .
$$

Now we are going to prove another maximal principle that is different from Theorem 4.6.

Lemma 4.7. Under Assumption A, for any fixed point $x_{0} \in M$ and $\varepsilon>0$, we can find constants $c(\varepsilon)>0$ and $c_{12}>0$ such that for all $k \geq c_{12}$, there exists a function $\theta(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$ satisfying the following:

$$
\begin{gather*}
0 \leq \theta(x) \leq 1 \quad \text { on } M \\
\theta(x) \equiv 1 \quad \forall x \in B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right), \\
\theta(x) \equiv 0 \quad \forall x \in M \backslash B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right), \\
\left|\nabla_{i}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)\right| \leq \frac{c(\varepsilon)}{k}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} \quad \forall x \in \Omega  \tag{93}\\
\nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right) \leq \frac{c(\varepsilon)}{k}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} g_{i j}(x, 0) \quad \forall x \in \Omega
\end{gather*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gather*}
B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right)=\left\{x \in M \mid \gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)<k\right\} \\
\Omega=\{x \in M \mid \theta(x)>0\} \tag{94}
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. Suppose $\rho(t) \in C^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$ is a function such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
0 \leq \rho(t) \leq 1, \\
0 \leq \rho^{\prime}(t) \leq 90, \\
\rho(t) \equiv 0,  \tag{95}\\
0<\infty<t<+\infty \\
0<\rho(t)<1, \\
\rho(t) \equiv 1, \quad \frac{34}{24}<t<\frac{35}{24} \\
\frac{35}{24} \leq t<+\infty
\end{gather*}
$$

It is easy to show that such a $\rho(t)$ exists. Then we define a function $\tilde{\chi}(t) \in C^{\infty}\left[0, \frac{7}{4}\right)$ as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tilde{\chi}(t) \equiv 1, \quad 0 \leq t \leq \frac{5}{4} \\
& \tilde{\chi}(t)=1+\exp \left(-\frac{1}{t-\frac{5}{4}}\right), \quad \frac{5}{4}<t \leq \frac{11}{8} \\
& \tilde{\chi}(t)=[1-\rho(t)]\left[1+\exp \left(-\frac{1}{t-\frac{5}{4}}\right)\right]  \tag{96}\\
&+\rho(t) \exp \left[\frac{1}{\left(\frac{7}{4}-t\right)^{2}}\right], \quad \frac{11}{8}<t<\frac{3}{2} \\
& \tilde{\chi}(t)=\exp \left[\frac{1}{\left(\frac{7}{4}-t\right)^{2}}\right], \quad \frac{3}{2} \leq t<\frac{7}{4}
\end{align*}
$$

It is easy to see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\chi}(t) \in C^{\infty}\left[0, \frac{7}{4}\right) \tag{97}
\end{equation*}
$$

from (95) and (96), and that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\tilde{\chi}(t) \geq 1, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4}, \\
0 \leq \tilde{\chi}^{\prime}(t) \leq \tilde{c}(\varepsilon) \tilde{\chi}(t)^{1+\varepsilon}, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4},  \tag{98}\\
\left|\tilde{\chi}^{\prime \prime}(t)\right| \leq \tilde{c}(\varepsilon) \tilde{\chi}(t)^{1+\varepsilon}, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4},
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)>0$ depending only on $\varepsilon>0$.
Let

$$
\begin{align*}
\eta(t) & =\frac{1}{\tilde{\chi}(t)}, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4},  \tag{99}\\
\eta(t) & \equiv 0, \quad \frac{7}{4} \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Then $\eta(t) \in C^{\infty}[0,+\infty)$.
For $k>0$, let $\chi(t) \in C^{\infty}\left[0, \frac{7}{4} k\right)$ as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(t)=\tilde{\chi}(t / k), \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4} k \tag{100}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{gather*}
\chi(t) \geq 1, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4} k \\
0 \leq \chi^{\prime}(t) \leq \frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{k} \chi(t)^{1+\varepsilon}, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4} k  \tag{101}\\
\left|\chi^{\prime \prime}(t)\right| \leq \frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{k^{2}} \chi(t)^{1+\varepsilon}, \quad 0 \leq t<\frac{7}{4} k
\end{gather*}
$$

Choose a cut-off function $\zeta(x) \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$ such that

$$
\begin{gathered}
0 \leq \zeta(x) \leq 1 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R} \\
\zeta(x) \equiv 0 \quad \text { if } x \notin[-1,2] \\
\zeta(x) \equiv 1, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1, \\
\left|\zeta^{\prime}(x)\right| \leq 2 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R}, \\
\left|\zeta^{\prime \prime}(x)\right| \leq 8 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R},
\end{gathered}
$$

and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x)=\frac{\int_{M} \zeta\left(\gamma_{0}(x, y) / 64 \sqrt{k_{0}}\right)\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, y\right)\right] d y}{\int_{M} \zeta\left(\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, y\right) / 64 \sqrt{k_{0}}\right) d y} \quad \forall x \in M . \tag{103}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then similar to the proof of Lemma 4.2 we know that $\psi(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$, $\psi(x)>0$, and we can find a constant $c_{5}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{8}{9} \gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)-c_{5} \leq \psi(x) \leq \frac{10}{9} \gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)+c_{5}, \\
\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \psi(x)\right|^{2} \leq c_{5} \quad \forall x \in M,  \tag{104}\\
\nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi(x) \leq c_{5} g_{i j}(x, 0) .
\end{gather*}
$$

Now we define $\theta(x)$ as

$$
\theta(x)= \begin{cases}\frac{1}{\chi(\psi(x))} & \text { if } 0 \leq \psi(x)<\frac{7}{4} k  \tag{105}\\ 0 & \text { if } \psi(x) \geq \frac{7}{4} k\end{cases}
$$

Then from $\eta(t) \in C^{\infty}[0,+\infty)$ and $\psi(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$ it is easy to show that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\theta(x) \in C^{\infty}(M) \\
0 \leq \theta(x) \leq 1 \quad \forall x \in M \tag{106}
\end{gather*}
$$

Let $c_{12}=40 c_{5}$. Then if $k \geq c_{12}$, for any $x \in B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right)$ we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right) & \leq k \\
\psi(x) \leq \frac{10}{9} \gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)+c_{5} & \leq \frac{10}{9} k+\frac{1}{40} k<\frac{5}{4} k
\end{aligned}
$$

From (105) and (96) we have, respectively,

$$
\begin{gather*}
\theta(x)=\frac{1}{\chi(\psi(x))}, \quad \forall x \in B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right) \\
\theta(x) \equiv 1 \quad \forall x \in B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right) \tag{107}
\end{gather*}
$$

If $x \in M \backslash B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)$, then $\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right) \geq 2 k$ and

$$
\psi(x) \geq \frac{8}{9} \gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)-c_{5} \geq \frac{16}{9} k-\frac{1}{40} k>\frac{7}{4} k
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta(x) \equiv 0 \quad \forall x \in M \backslash B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right) \tag{108}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $\Omega=\{x \in M \mid \theta(x)>0\}$, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{1}{\theta(x)}=\chi(\psi(x)) \quad \forall x \in \Omega \\
\nabla_{i}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)=\chi^{\prime}(\psi(x)) \nabla_{i}^{0} \psi(x)
\end{gathered}
$$

From (101) and (104) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\nabla_{i}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)\right| \leq c_{5}^{1 / 2} \cdot \frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{k} \chi(\psi(x))^{1+\varepsilon} \\
& \left|\nabla_{i}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)\right| \leq \frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) \sqrt{c_{5}}}{k}\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} \quad \text { on } \Omega \tag{109}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)=\chi^{\prime \prime}(\psi) \nabla_{i}^{0} \psi \cdot \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi+\chi^{\prime}(\psi) \nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi \\
& \leq c_{5} \cdot \frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{k^{2}} \chi(\psi)^{1+\varepsilon} g_{i j}(x, 0)+c_{5} \cdot \frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{k} \chi(\psi)^{1+\varepsilon} g_{i j}(x, 0) \\
& \leq\left[\frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) c_{5}}{k}+\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) c_{5}\right] \frac{1}{k} \chi(\psi)^{1+\varepsilon} g_{i j}(x, 0) \\
& \leq\left[\frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{40}+\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) c_{5}\right] \frac{1}{k}\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} g_{i j}(x, 0), \\
& \nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right) \leq\left[\frac{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon)}{40}+\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) c_{5}\right] \frac{1}{k}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} g_{i j}(x, 0) \quad \text { on } \Omega . \tag{110}
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
c(\varepsilon)=\max \left\{\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) \sqrt{c_{5}}, \tilde{c}(\varepsilon) / 40+\tilde{c}(\varepsilon) c_{5}\right\} .
$$

Then the lemma follows from (106), (107), (108), (109), and (110).
Lemma 4.8. For the function $\theta(x)$ obtained in Lemma 4.7, we can find another constant $c_{13}>0$ depending only on $\varepsilon$ and the constants in Assumption A, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{t}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right) \leq \frac{c_{13}}{k}\left(\frac{1}{\theta(x)}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} \quad \forall x \in \Omega, 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{111}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Similar to the proof of Lemma 4.3.
Now we are going to prove the following maximal principle on noncompact manifold $M$.

Lemma 4.9. Under Assumption A, suppose there exist constants $0<$ $\varepsilon, c_{14}, c_{15}<+\infty$, and $\varphi(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \\
& \varphi(x, 0) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M,  \tag{112}\\
& Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq-c_{15} \varphi^{1+\varepsilon} \quad \text { if } \varphi \geq c_{14} .
\end{align*}
$$

Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{113}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Fix a point $x_{0} \in M$ and suppose this lemma is not true. Then we can find some $\left(x_{2}, t_{2}\right) \in M \times[0, T]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi\left(x_{2}, t_{2}\right)>c_{14} . \tag{114}
\end{equation*}
$$

Choose $k \geq c_{12}$ large enough such that $x_{2} \in B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right)$, and let $\theta(x) \in$ $C^{\infty}(M)$ be the function constructed in Lemma 4.7. Then we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)=\theta(x) \varphi(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{115}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $x_{2} \in B_{0}\left(x_{0}, k\right)$, we have $\theta\left(x_{2}\right)=1$, and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{2}, t_{2}\right)=\varphi\left(x_{2}, t_{2}\right)>c_{14} . \tag{116}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $(x, t) \in\left[M \backslash B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)\right] \times[0, T]$, then $\theta(x) \equiv 0$. Thus from (115) we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t) \equiv 0 \quad \text { on }\left\{M \backslash B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)\right\} \times[0, T] . \tag{117}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\overline{B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)} \times[0, T]$ is a compact set, where $\overline{B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)}$ is the closure of $B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)$, from (116) and (117) it follows that there exists $\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \in$ $\overline{B_{0}\left(x_{0}, 2 k\right)} \times[0, T]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\sup _{M \times[0, T]} \tilde{\varphi}(x, t)>c_{14} \tag{118}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq 0, \quad \nabla \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=0 \tag{119}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $0 \leq \theta(x) \leq 1$,

$$
\tilde{\varphi}(x, 0)=\theta(x) \varphi(x, 0) \leq c_{14} \theta(x) \leq c_{14} .
$$

From (118) it follows that $t_{1}>0$, so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \geq 0 \tag{120}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, by (115) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\theta \varphi)=\theta \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\theta[\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t)]=\theta \Delta \varphi+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t) \\
= & \Delta(\theta \varphi)-2 \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p} \varphi-\varphi \Delta \theta+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t) \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}= & \Delta \tilde{\varphi}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p}(\theta \varphi)+\frac{2 \varphi}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\varphi \Delta \theta+\theta Q(\varphi, x, t), \\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}=\Delta \tilde{\varphi}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p} \tilde{\varphi}+\left[\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\Delta \theta\right] \varphi+\theta Q . \tag{121}
\end{align*}
$$

Let $(x, t)=\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)$. Then from (118) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta\left(x_{1}\right) \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)>c_{14} \tag{122}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $0 \leq \theta\left(x_{1}\right) \leq 1, \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)>c_{14}$. By (112) we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq-c_{15} \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon},  \tag{123}\\
\left(\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\Delta \theta\right) \varphi+\theta Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \\
\leq\left(\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\Delta \theta\right) \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)-c_{15} \theta\left(x_{1}\right) \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} \\
=\left[\frac{2}{\theta^{3}}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\frac{\Delta \theta}{\theta^{2}}-\frac{c_{15}}{\theta} \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)^{\varepsilon}\right] \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \theta^{2} .
\end{gather*}
$$

From (122) it follows that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)^{\varepsilon}>c_{14}^{\varepsilon}\left(\frac{1}{\theta\left(x_{1}\right)}\right)^{\varepsilon}, \\
\left(\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\Delta \theta\right) \varphi+\theta Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \\
<\left[\frac{2}{\theta^{3}}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\frac{\Delta \theta}{\theta}-c_{15} c_{14}^{\varepsilon}\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)^{1+\varepsilon}\right] \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \theta^{2} \\
=\left[\Delta\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)-c_{15} c_{14}^{\varepsilon}\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)^{1+\varepsilon}\right] \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \theta^{2} .
\end{gathered}
$$

By means of Lemma 4.8 we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\Delta \theta\right) \varphi+\theta Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \\
& \quad<\left(\frac{c_{13}}{k}-c_{15} c_{14}^{\varepsilon}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\theta}\right)^{1+\varepsilon} \theta^{2} \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \quad \text { at }\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \tag{124}
\end{align*}
$$

If we choose $k$ large enough such that $c_{13} / k-c_{15} c_{14}^{\varepsilon} \leq 0$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}-\Delta \theta\right) \varphi+\theta Q\left(\varphi, x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0 \quad \text { at }\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \tag{125}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (119), (121), and (125) we know that

$$
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}}{\partial t}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0
$$

which contradicts (120); therefore the lemma is true.
Lemma 4.10. Under Assumption A, suppose there exist constants $0<$ $\varepsilon<+\infty$ and $0<c_{14}, c_{15}, c_{16}<+\infty$, and $\varphi(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$ such that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T], \\
\\
\varphi(x, 0) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M, \\
Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq \frac{c_{16}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}}{\varphi}-c_{15} \varphi^{1+\varepsilon} \quad \text { for } \varphi \geq c_{14} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Then we have

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Proof. Let $\alpha$ be an odd integer and $\alpha \geq 1+c_{16}$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x, t)=\varphi(x, t)^{\alpha} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{126}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t} & =\alpha \varphi^{\alpha-1} \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\alpha \varphi^{\alpha-1}[\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t)] \\
& =\Delta \varphi^{\alpha}-\alpha(\alpha-1) \varphi^{\alpha-2}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}+\alpha \varphi^{\alpha-1} Q(\varphi, x, t)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t}=\Delta \psi+\tilde{Q}(\psi, x, t) \tag{127}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{Q}(\psi, x, t)=-\alpha(\alpha-1) \varphi^{\alpha-2}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}+\alpha \varphi^{\alpha-1} Q(\varphi, x, t) . \tag{128}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (126) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x, 0) \leq c_{14}^{\alpha} \quad \text { on } M \tag{129}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\psi(x, t) \geq c_{14}^{\alpha}$, then $\varphi(x, t) \geq c_{14}$,

$$
\begin{gathered}
Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq \frac{c_{16}}{\varphi}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}-c_{15} \varphi^{1+\varepsilon} \\
\tilde{Q}(\psi, x, t) \leq-\alpha(\alpha-1) \varphi^{\alpha-2}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}+c_{16} \alpha \varphi^{\alpha-2}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}-\alpha c_{15} \varphi^{\alpha+\varepsilon} \\
=\alpha\left(1+c_{16}-\alpha\right) \varphi^{\alpha-2}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}-c_{15} \alpha \psi^{1+\varepsilon / \alpha} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Since $\alpha \geq 1+c_{16}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{Q}(\psi, x, t) \leq-c_{15} \alpha \psi^{1+\varepsilon / \alpha} \quad \text { for } \psi \geq c_{14}^{\alpha} \tag{130}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (127), (129), (130) and Lemma 4.9 it follows that

$$
\psi(x, t) \leq c_{14}^{\alpha} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

By (126) we get

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Lemma 4.11. Under Assumption A, suppose there exist constants $0<$ $\varepsilon<+\infty$ and $0<c_{14}, c_{15}, c_{16}, c_{17}<+\infty$, and $\varphi(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$ such that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \\
\varphi(x, 0) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M \\
Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq \frac{c_{16}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}}{\varphi}+\psi_{i} \nabla_{i} \varphi-c_{17} \varphi\left|\psi_{i}\right|^{2}-c_{15} \varphi^{1+\varepsilon} \quad \text { for } \varphi \geq c_{14}
\end{gathered}
$$

where $\left\{\psi_{i}\right\}$ is a tensor. Then we have

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Proof. The proof follows from the inequality

$$
\psi_{i} \nabla_{i} \varphi-c_{17} \varphi\left|\psi_{i}\right|^{2} \leq \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} \psi\right|^{2}}{4 c_{17} \varphi}
$$

and Lemma 4.10.
Theorem 4.12. Under Assumption A, suppose there exist constants $0<$ $\varepsilon<+\infty$ and $0<c_{10}, c_{11}, c_{14}, c_{15}, c_{16}, c_{17}<+\infty$, and the function $\varphi(x, t) \in$ $C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi+Q(\varphi, x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \\
& \varphi(x, 0) \leq 0 \text { on } M, \\
& Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq c_{10}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}+c_{11} \varphi \text { for } 0 \leq \varphi \leq c_{14}  \tag{131}\\
& Q(\varphi, x, t) \leq \frac{c_{16}}{\varphi}\left|\nabla_{i} \varphi\right|^{2}+\psi_{i} \cdot \nabla_{i} \varphi-c_{17} \varphi\left|\psi_{i}\right|^{2}-c_{15} \varphi^{1+\varepsilon} \\
& \qquad \text { for } \varphi \geq c_{14}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\left\{\psi_{i}\right\}$ is a tensor. Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{132}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. From Lemma 4.11 we know that

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq c_{14} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Using Theorem 4.6 we thus complete the proof.
Now we are going to use the maximal principle derived above to prove some properties of curvature on $M$ under the Ricci flow. First we have

Lemma 4.13. Under Assumption A, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R(x, t) \leq n^{2} \sqrt{c_{1}} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{133}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Using (5) and Lemma 3.1 we get respectively

$$
\begin{gather*}
|R(x, t)| \leq n^{2} \sqrt{c_{1}} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{134}\\
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t}=\Delta R+2 S
\end{gather*}
$$

where $S=g^{i k} g^{j l} R_{i j} R_{k l} \geq 0$. Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t} \geq \Delta R \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{135}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (5) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, 0)>0 \quad \text { on } M \tag{136}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore, in consequence of (134), (135), and Theorem 4.6,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t)>0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{137}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (134) implies

$$
0<R(x, t) \leq n^{2} \sqrt{c_{1}} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] .
$$

Next we are going to show that the Ricci deformation preserves the positivity of the curvature operator on the complete noncompact Riemannian manifold $M$. Hamilton [7] proved this for the case when $M$ is a compact manifold. In the case when $M$ is a noncompact complete manifold the proof basically is the same as the compact case, but we need to use some cut-off function technique, just as we did in Lemma 4.5. For more details, see Hamilton [7].

We regard the Riemannian curvature tensor $\mathrm{Rm}=\left\{R_{i j k l}\right\}$ as a symmetric bilinear form on the two-forms $\Lambda^{2}(M)$ by letting

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Rm}(\varphi, \psi)=R_{i j k l} \phi_{i j} \psi_{k l} . \tag{138}
\end{equation*}
$$

We say that the manifold has a positive curvature operator if $\operatorname{Rm}(\phi, \phi)>0$ for all two-forms $\phi \neq 0$; in this case we denote

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}>0 \text { or } \mathrm{Rm}>0 . \tag{139}
\end{equation*}
$$

We say that the manifold has a nonnegative curvature operator if $\operatorname{Rm}(\phi, \phi)$ $\geq 0$ for all two-forms $\phi$ and denote it by

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l} \geq 0 \text { or } \mathrm{Rm} \geq 0 \tag{140}
\end{equation*}
$$

We want to prove
Theorem 4.14. Under Assumption A , if $R_{i j k l}(x, 0) \geq 0$ on $M$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}(x, t) \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{141}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, if $R_{i j k l}(x, 0)>0$ on $M$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}(x, t)>0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{142}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Since (142) is an immediate consequence of (141), by using the local technique, which is exactly the same as the one used in the compact case, we only need to prove (141).

From Lemma 3.1 we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R_{i j k l}= & \Delta R_{i j k l}+2\left(B_{i j k l}-B_{i j l k}+B_{i k j l}-B_{i l j k}\right) \\
& -\left(R_{p i} R_{q j k l}+R_{p j} R_{i q k l}+R_{p k} R_{i j q l}+R_{p l} R_{i j k q}\right) g^{p q}
\end{aligned}
$$

To simplify these equations we pick an abstract vector bundle $V$ isomorphic to the tangent bundle $T M$, but with a fixed metric $h_{a b}$ on the fibers. Choose an isometry $u=\left\{u_{a}^{i}\right\}$ between $V$ and $T M$ at the time $t=0$, and let the isometry $u$ evolve by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} u_{a}^{i}=g^{i j} R_{j k} u_{a}^{k} \tag{143}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the pull-back metric

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{a b}=g_{i j} u_{a}^{i} u_{b}^{j} \tag{144}
\end{equation*}
$$

remains constant in time, since it is easy to see that $\frac{\partial}{\partial t} h_{a b} \equiv 0$, and $u$ remains an isometry between the varying metric $g_{i j}$ on $T M$ and the fixed metric $h_{a b}$ on $V$. Now we use $u$ to pull back the curvature tensor to a tensor on $V$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{a b c d}=R_{i j k l} u_{a}^{i} u_{b}^{j} u_{c}^{k} u_{d}^{l} \tag{145}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can also pull back the Levi-Civita connection $\Gamma=\left\{\Gamma_{i j}^{k}\right\}$ on $T M$ to get a connection $\tilde{\Gamma}=\left\{\tilde{\Gamma}_{j c}^{a}\right\}$ on $V$, where the covariant derivative of a section $w=\left\{w^{a}\right\}$ of $V$ is given locally by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{i} w^{a}=\frac{\partial w^{a}}{\partial x^{i}}+\tilde{\Gamma}_{i b}^{a} w^{b} \tag{146}
\end{equation*}
$$

We may take the covariant derivative of any tensor of $V$ and $T M$, in particular we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{i} u_{a}^{j}=0, \quad \nabla_{i} h_{a b}=0, \tag{147}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let the Laplacian

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta R_{a b c d}=g^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R_{a b c d} \tag{148}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the trace of the second covariant derivative. From Hamilton [7] we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R_{a b c d}=\Delta R_{a b c d}+2\left(B_{a b c d}-B_{a b d c}+B_{a c b d}-B_{a d b c}\right) \tag{149}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B_{a b c d}=R_{a e b f} R_{c e d f}$.
We regard the two-forms $\Lambda^{2}$ on $V$ as the Lie algebra so $(n)$ of the Lie group of rotations of $V$. Choose a local chart on $V$ where $h_{a b}$ is the identity, the metric on $\Lambda^{2}$ is given by $|\phi|^{2}=\langle\phi, \phi\rangle$, where $\langle\phi, \psi\rangle=\phi_{a b} \psi_{a b}$, and the Lie bracket is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
[\phi, \psi]_{a b}=\phi_{a c} \psi_{b c}-\psi_{a c} \phi_{b c} . \tag{150}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is easy to check that the trilinear form $\langle[\phi, \psi], w\rangle$ is fully antisymmetric; choose an orthonormal basis $\phi^{\alpha}=\left\{\phi_{a b}^{\alpha}\right\}$ for the 2 -forms on $V$, then the inner product on $\Lambda^{2}(V)$,

$$
h_{\alpha \beta}=\left\langle\phi^{\alpha}, \phi^{\beta}\right\rangle,
$$

is the identity matrix in the local chart. The Lie bracket is given by

$$
\left[\phi^{\alpha}, \phi^{\beta}\right]=c_{\gamma}^{\alpha \beta} \phi^{\gamma},
$$

where the $c_{\gamma}^{\alpha \beta}$ are the Lie structure constants relative to this basis. Note that $c^{\alpha \beta \gamma}=c_{\delta}^{\alpha \beta} h^{\gamma \delta}$ is fully antisymmetric since

$$
\begin{equation*}
c^{\alpha \beta \gamma}=\left\langle\left[\phi^{\alpha}, \phi^{\beta}\right], \phi^{\gamma}\right\rangle . \tag{151}
\end{equation*}
$$

The tensor $R_{a b c d}$ on $V$ may be regarded as a symmetric bilinear form $M_{\alpha \beta}$ on $\Lambda^{2}(V)$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{a b c d}=M_{\alpha \beta} \phi_{a b}^{\alpha} \phi_{c d}^{\beta} . \tag{152}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then from Hamilton [7] we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R_{a b c d}=\Delta R_{a b c d}+R_{a b c d}^{2}+R_{a b c d}^{\sharp} \tag{153}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& R_{a b c d}^{2}=R_{a b e f} R_{c d e f}=2\left(B_{a b c d}-B_{a b d c}\right)=M_{\alpha \gamma} M_{\gamma \beta} \phi_{a b}^{\alpha} \phi_{c d}^{\beta},  \tag{154}\\
& R_{a b c d}^{\sharp}=2\left(B_{a c b d}-B_{a d b c}\right)=c_{\alpha \gamma \eta} c_{\beta \delta \theta} M_{\gamma \delta} M_{\eta \theta} \phi_{a b}^{\alpha} \phi_{c d}^{\beta},
\end{align*}
$$

or equivalently

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta}=\Delta M_{\alpha \beta}+M_{\alpha \gamma} M_{\gamma \beta}+c_{\alpha \gamma \eta} c_{\beta \delta \theta} M_{\gamma \delta} M_{\eta \theta} \tag{155}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any symmetric bilinear form $A=\left\{A_{\alpha \beta}\right\}$ on $\Lambda^{2}(V)$, if we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(A)_{\alpha \beta}=A_{\alpha \gamma} A_{\gamma \beta}+c_{\alpha \gamma \eta} c_{\beta \delta \theta} A_{\gamma \delta} A_{\eta \theta} \tag{156}
\end{equation*}
$$

then we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta}=\Delta M_{\alpha \beta}+Q(M)_{\alpha \beta} \tag{157}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $\left\{A_{\alpha \beta}\right\}$, if $A_{\alpha \beta} w^{\alpha} w^{\beta} \geq 0$ for all $w=\left\{w^{\alpha}\right\}$, we denote

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\alpha \beta} \geq 0 . \tag{158}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $\left\{A_{\alpha \beta}\right\}$ and $\left\{\tilde{A}_{\alpha \beta}\right\}$, if $A_{\alpha \beta}-\tilde{A}_{\alpha \beta} \geq 0$, we denote

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\alpha \beta} \geq \tilde{A}_{\alpha \beta} \tag{159}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any fixed $(x, t) \in M \times[0, T]$, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t)=\sup _{\theta \in \mathbf{R}}\left\{\theta \mid M_{\alpha \beta}(x, t) \geq \theta \delta_{\alpha \beta}\right\} \tag{160}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\delta_{\alpha \beta}= \begin{cases}1, & \alpha=\beta \\ 0, & \alpha \neq \beta .\end{cases}
$$

Lemma 4.15. For any $(x, t) \in M \times[0, T], R_{i j k l}(x, t) \geq 0$ if and only if $M_{\alpha \beta}(x, t) \geq 0$.

Proof. By the definition of $M_{\alpha \beta}$.

From the assumption of Theorem 4.14, we have $R_{i j k l}(x, 0) \geq 0$ on $M$, and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{\alpha \beta}(x, 0) \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M . \tag{161}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, 0) \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M . \tag{162}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we can prove $\varphi(x, t) \geq 0$ on $M \times[0, T]$, then Theorem 4.14 follows from Lemma 4.15.

From Assumption A it follows that

$$
\left|R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{1} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

By (143), (144), and (145) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{a b c d}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq \tilde{c}_{1} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{163}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0<\tilde{c}_{1}<+\infty$ is some constant. Thus by the definition of $M_{\alpha \beta}$ there exists a constant $0<c_{18}<+\infty$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
-c_{18} \delta_{\alpha \beta} \leq M_{\alpha \beta}(x, t) \leq c_{18} \delta_{\alpha \beta} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{164}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \geq-c_{18} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{165}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 4.16. For any symmetric bilinear form $\left\{A_{\alpha \beta}\right\}$, if $A_{\alpha \beta} \geq 0$, then $Q(A)_{\alpha \beta} \geq 0$.

Proof. Just by the definition of $Q(A)_{\alpha \beta}$.
From (165) it follows

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{\alpha \beta}(x, t) \geq \varphi(x, t) \delta_{\alpha \beta} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T], \tag{166}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\alpha \beta}=M_{\alpha \beta}-\varphi \delta_{\alpha \beta} \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{167}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Lemma 4.16 we get $Q(A)_{\alpha \beta} \geq 0$. Since $Q(A)_{\alpha \beta}$ actually are the quadratic polynomials of $A_{\alpha \beta}$, from (156) and (164) we have

$$
Q(M)_{\alpha \beta} \geq-c_{19}\left[c_{18}|\varphi|+\varphi^{2}\right] \delta_{\alpha \beta} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

and, in consequence of (164) again,

$$
|\varphi(x, t)| \leq c_{18} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] .
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(M)_{\alpha \beta} \geq-2 c_{19} c_{18}|\varphi| \delta_{\alpha \beta} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{168}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(M)_{\alpha \beta} \geq 2 c_{19} c_{18} \varphi \delta_{\alpha \beta} \quad \text { for } \varphi \leq 0 \tag{169}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0<c_{19}<+\infty$ is some constant.
Now if we can find some $\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right) \in M \times[0, T]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)<0 . \tag{170}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\theta(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0, T])$ be the function constructed in Lemma 4.4, and consider $\tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}$ as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}(x, t)=\theta(x, t) M_{\alpha \beta}(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{171}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)=\sup _{\theta_{0} \in \mathbf{R}}\left\{\theta_{0} \mid \tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}(x, t) \geq \theta_{0} \delta_{\alpha \beta}\right\} . \tag{172}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t) \equiv \theta(x, t) \varphi(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{173}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $0<\theta(x, t) \leq 1$, from (170) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)=\theta\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right) \varphi\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)<0 \tag{174}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (46) and (165) we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t) \geq-\frac{c_{18} c_{8}}{1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)} \tag{175}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus if $\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)>-c_{18} c_{8} / \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)>\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right) \tag{176}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\overline{B_{0}\left(x_{0},-c_{18} c_{8} / \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)\right)} \times[0, T]$ is a compact subset of $M \times[0, T]$ and $\tilde{\varphi}(x, t)$ is a continuous function, from (176) it follows that there exists a point $\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \in M \times[0, T]$ with

$$
\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x_{1}\right) \leq-c_{18} c_{8} / \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{0}, t_{0}\right)
$$

such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\inf _{M \times[0, T]} \tilde{\varphi}(x, t)<0 \tag{177}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, by (172) one can find an index $\alpha_{1}$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right),  \tag{178}\\
\tilde{M}_{\alpha \alpha}(x, t) \geq \tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \quad \forall(x, t) \in M \times[0, T], \forall \text { index } \alpha . \tag{179}
\end{gather*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \geq 0, \quad \nabla \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=0 \tag{180}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\varphi(x, 0) \geq 0$, we have $\tilde{\varphi}(x, 0) \geq 0$, and from (177) we get $t_{1}>0$. From (179) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \leq 0 \tag{181}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\theta M_{\alpha \beta}\right)=\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta}+\theta \frac{\partial}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta} \\
= & \theta\left[\Delta M_{\alpha \beta}+Q(M)_{\alpha \beta}\right]+\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta} \\
= & \Delta\left(\theta M_{\alpha \beta}\right)-2 \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p} M_{\alpha \beta}+\theta Q(M)_{\alpha \beta}+\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta}-M_{\alpha \beta} \Delta \theta \\
82) & =\Delta \tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p}\left(\theta M_{\alpha \beta}\right)+\frac{2\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}}{\theta} M_{\alpha \beta}+\theta Q(M)_{\alpha \beta} \\
& +\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} M_{\alpha \beta}-(\Delta \theta) M_{\alpha \beta} \\
= & \Delta \tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p} \tilde{M}_{\alpha \beta}+\left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}-\Delta \theta+\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}\right) M_{\alpha \beta} \\
& +\theta Q(M)_{\alpha \beta} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now let $(x, t)=\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)$ and $\alpha=\beta=\alpha_{1}$. Since

$$
\tilde{\varphi}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\theta\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0
$$

we have

$$
\varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0
$$

From (169) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(M)_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}} \geq 2 c_{18} c_{19} \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \tag{183}
\end{equation*}
$$

But $M_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)=\varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)$, so by (182) and (183) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}} \geq & \Delta \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}-\frac{2}{\theta} \nabla_{p} \theta \cdot \nabla_{p} \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}} \\
& +\left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}-\Delta \theta+\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}+2 c_{18} c_{19} \theta\right) \varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right) \tag{184}
\end{align*}
$$

By Lemma 4.4 if we choose $c_{7}>2 c_{18} c_{19}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t}-\Delta \theta+\frac{2}{\theta}\left|\nabla_{p} \theta\right|^{2}+2 c_{18} c_{19} \theta<0 \tag{185}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\varphi\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)<0$, from (180), (184), and (185) it follows that

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \tilde{M}_{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{1}}\left(x_{1}, t_{1}\right)>0
$$

which contradicts (181). Thus

$$
\varphi(x, t) \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

and the proof of Theorem 4.14 is complete.

## 5. Long time existence

Let $M$ be an $n$-dimensional Riemannian manifold with metric

$$
d s^{2}=g_{i j} d x^{i} d x^{j}>0
$$

If the curvature satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \delta_{n}(1-\varepsilon)^{2} \frac{2}{n(n-1)} R^{2} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\varepsilon>0, \delta_{3}>0, \delta_{4}=\frac{1}{5}, \delta_{5}=\frac{1}{10}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{n}=\frac{2}{(n-2)(n+1)}, \quad n \geq 6 \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the curvature operator is positive, more precisely, in this case we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l} u_{i j} u_{k l} \geq 2 \varepsilon\left|u_{i j}\right|^{2} \frac{R}{n(n-1)} \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any two-form $\left\{u_{i j}\right\}$. For the proof of this statement, see G. Huisken [8].

Now we choose constants $\beta_{n} \leq \delta_{n} /[2 n(n-1)]$ depending only on $n$, and suppose the curvature of the manifold considered satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta_{n} R^{2} \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this case from (1) and (3) we know that for any $\left\{u_{i j}\right\}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l} u_{i j} u_{k l} \geq\left|u_{i j}\right|^{2} \frac{R}{n(n-1)} \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 5.1. Suppose $M$ is an n-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with its curvature satisfying condition (4). Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq\left[\beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right] R^{2} \quad \text { on } M . \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. It is easy to show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)} R^{2} \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4) and (7) we get (6) immediately.

Theorem 5.2. Suppose $M$ is an n-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with metric $g_{i j}(x)$. If the curvature of $M$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta_{n} R^{2}, \quad 0<R \leq c_{0} \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0<c_{0}<+\infty$ is a constant, then the evolution equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}(x, t), \quad g_{i j}(x, 0)=g_{i j}(x), \quad x \in M \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a solution for all time $0 \leq t<+\infty$.
This long time existence theorem is what we want to prove in this section, but before we start the proof, we must prove several lemmas.

Using (8) and Lemma 5.1 we find

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j k l}(x, 0)\right|^{2} \leq\left[\beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right] c_{0}^{2} \quad \forall x \in M . \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (5) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}(x, 0)>0 \quad \forall x \in M \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (10) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R_{i j i j}(x, 0) \leq\left[\beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right]^{1 / 2} n^{2} c_{0} \quad \text { on } M \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus by using Theorem 3.4 we know that the evolution equation (9) has a solution for a short time $0 \leq t \leq T_{0}$, where $T_{0}>0$ depends only on $n$ and $c_{0}$, and by using Lemma 3.4 we still have the short time estimate:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{M}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{m+1}\left(n, c_{0}\right) / t^{m}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0}, m \geq 0 \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 5.3. The solution obtained above satisfies Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.

Proof. Similarly to the proof of (3) in $\S 4$ by using (13).
Now we define $0<T_{1} \leq+\infty$ as follows:
$T_{1}=\sup _{\tau \in \mathbf{R}}\left\{\tau \mid\right.$ the evolution equation (9) has a solution $g_{i j}(x, t)$ on $M \times[0, \tau)$, and for any $0<T<\tau$, the solution $g_{i j}(x, t)$ satisfies Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times[0, T]$ and (13) holds on $\left.M \times\left[0, \frac{1}{2} T_{0}\right]\right\}$.

Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<T_{0} \leq T_{1} \leq+\infty \tag{15}
\end{equation*}
$$

What we need to prove is that $T_{1}=+\infty$.

For $0<T_{2}<T_{1}$, suppose $g_{i j}(x, t)$ is a solution of the evolution equation on $M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right.$ ), and for any $0<T<T_{2}$, the solution $g_{i j}(x, t)$ satisfies Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times[0, T]$.

Thus for any $T<T_{2}$, the maximal principle Theorem 4.6 and Theorem 4.12 are true on $M \times[0, T]$, but since $T<T_{2}$ is arbitrary, we know that Theorem 4.6 and Theorem 4.12 actually hold on $M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right)$.

Lemma 5.4. We have the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}(x, t)>0, \quad R(x, t)>0 \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. From (11) we complete the proof immediately by using Theorem 4.14.

Lemma 5.5. Suppose $0 \leq \sigma<\frac{1}{2}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\sigma}(x, t)=\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2-\sigma}}(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} f_{\sigma}= & \Delta f_{\sigma}+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}-\frac{\sigma(1-\sigma)}{R^{4-\sigma}}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{18}\\
& -\frac{2}{R^{4-\sigma}}\left|R \nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}-R_{i j k l} \nabla_{p} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{\sigma}{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} S\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
P=2 R R_{i j k l} R_{i m k n} R_{m j n l}+\frac{1}{2} R R_{i j k l} R_{k l m n} R_{m n i j}-|\mathrm{Rm}|^{2} S
$$

Proof. This is Lemma 3.2 [8].
Lemma 5.6. If

$$
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \delta_{n}(1-\varepsilon)^{2} \frac{2}{n(n-1)} R^{2}, \quad \varepsilon>0
$$

then

$$
P \leq-\frac{\varepsilon}{n} R^{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}
$$

Proof. This is Theorem 3.3 [8].
Lemma 5.7. $|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} / R^{2} \leq \beta_{n}$ for $0 \leq t<T_{2}$.
Proof. Let $f_{0}(x, t)=\left(|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} / R^{2}\right)(x, t)$. Then from (18) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} f_{0}=\Delta f_{0}+\frac{2}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{0}-\frac{2}{R^{4}}\left|R \nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}-R_{i j k l} \nabla_{p} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{3}} P \tag{19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t)=R\left(f_{0}-\beta_{n}\right) \tag{20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t)=\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R}(x, t)-\beta_{n} R(x, t) \tag{21}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (3) and (7) of $\S 3$ we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}= & \Delta \varphi-\frac{2}{R^{3}}\left|R \nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}-R_{i j k l} \nabla_{p} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{2}} P  \tag{22}\\
& +2 S\left(f_{0}-\beta_{n}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

From (8) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{0}(x, 0) \leq \beta_{n}, \quad x \in M \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

and that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, 0) \leq 0, \quad x \in M \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using Lemma 5.4 and formula (1.10) in [2] we get, respectively,

$$
\begin{gather*}
0<R_{i j i j}(x, t) \leq R(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \\
\left|R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq 200 n^{4} R(x, t)^{2} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) . \tag{25}
\end{gather*}
$$

Since $|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} \leq\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\mid \stackrel{\circ}{R} m^{2} \leq 200 n^{4} R^{2} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \\
f_{0}(x, t) \leq 200 n^{4} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right)  \tag{26}\\
\varphi(x, t) \leq R(x, t) f_{0}(x, t) \leq 200 n^{4} R(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right)
\end{gather*}
$$

For any $T<T_{2}$, since Assumption A of $\S 4$ is true on $M \times[0, T]$, we can find a constant $c_{1}(T)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{1}(T) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{28}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with Lemma 5.4 implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R(x, t) \leq n^{2} \sqrt{c_{1}(T)} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{29}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (27) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x, t) \leq 200 n^{6} \sqrt{c_{1}(T)} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{30}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\varphi \geq 0$, from (20) we have $|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} / R^{2} \geq \beta_{n}$. Define

$$
\theta^{2}=\frac{\beta_{n} R^{2}}{|\stackrel{\mathrm{R} m}{ }|^{2}} \text { or } \quad \theta=\frac{R}{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R} m}|} \beta_{n}^{1 / 2}
$$

Then $0<\theta \leq 1$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \beta_{n}=\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2}} \theta^{2},  \tag{31}\\
& \varphi(x, t)=R\left(\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2}}-\beta_{n}\right)=R\left(\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2}}-\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2}} \theta^{2}\right) \\
&=\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R}(1-\theta)(1+\theta) \geq \frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R}(1-\theta) \\
&=\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|}{R}(1-\theta)|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}| \geq \beta_{n}^{1 / 2}(1-\theta)|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}| .
\end{align*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1-\theta)|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}| \leq \frac{\varphi(x, t)}{\sqrt{\beta_{n}}} \tag{32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{align*}
& \stackrel{\circ}{\tilde{R}}_{i j k l}=\theta \stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l}, \\
& U_{i j k l}=\frac{1}{n(n-1)} R\left(g_{i k} g_{j l}-g_{i l} g_{j k}\right)  \tag{33}\\
& \tilde{R}_{i j k l}=U_{i j k l}+\theta \stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l}=U_{i j k l}+\stackrel{\circ}{\tilde{R}}_{i j k l}
\end{align*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}=U_{i j k l}+\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l} \tag{34}
\end{equation*}
$$

From §1 we know that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=\left|U_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{2}  \tag{35}\\
& \left|\tilde{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=\left|U_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\theta^{2}\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R_{i j k l}}\right|^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $0<\theta \leq 1$, from (28) and (35) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\tilde{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq c_{1}(T) . \tag{36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{P}=2 \tilde{R} \tilde{R}_{i j k l} \tilde{R}_{i m k n} \tilde{R}_{m j n l}+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{R} \tilde{R}_{i j k l} \tilde{R}_{k l m n} \tilde{R}_{m n i j}-\left|\tilde{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \tilde{S}, \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{R}=g^{i k} g^{j l} \tilde{R}_{i j k l}=R, \quad \tilde{S}=g^{i k} g^{j l} \tilde{R}_{i j} \tilde{R}_{k l}, \quad \tilde{R}_{i j}=g^{k l} \tilde{R}_{i k j l} . \tag{38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since

$$
\left|\stackrel{\circ}{\tilde{R}_{i j k l}}\right|^{2}=\theta^{2}\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{2}=\beta_{n} R^{2}=\beta_{n} \tilde{R}^{2}
$$

and $\beta_{n} \leq \delta_{n} /[2 n(n-1)]$, from Lemma 5.6 it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{P} \leq-\frac{1}{2 n} \tilde{R}^{2}|\stackrel{\check{\tilde{R}}}{i j k l}|^{2} \leq 0 \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the definition of $P$ and $\tilde{P}$,

$$
P-\tilde{P} \leq c_{2}\left(\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3}+\left|\tilde{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{3}\right)\left|R_{i j k l}-\tilde{R}_{i j k l}\right|
$$

which becomes, in consequence of (36),

$$
\begin{aligned}
P-\tilde{P} & \leq 2 c_{2}\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} \cdot\left|R_{i j k l}-\tilde{R}_{i j k l}\right| \\
& =2 c_{2}\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} \cdot\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R_{i j k l}}-\theta \stackrel{\circ}{R_{i j k l}}\right| \\
& =2 c_{2}\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3}(1-\theta)|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}| .
\end{aligned}
$$

From (25) and (32) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
P-\tilde{P} \leq 6000 c_{2} n^{6} R^{3} \cdot \frac{\varphi}{\sqrt{\beta_{n}}} \leq c_{3} R^{3} \varphi \tag{40}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (39) implies $P \leq c_{3} R^{3} \varphi$. By using (29) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{4}{R^{2}} P \leq c_{3} \cdot 4 R \varphi \leq c_{4} \varphi \quad \text { for } \varphi \geq 0 \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, from (20) we have

$$
2 S\left(f_{0}-\beta_{n}\right)=\frac{2 S}{R} \varphi \leq \frac{2 n^{2}|\mathrm{Rm}|^{2}}{R} \varphi
$$

which together with (25) yields

$$
2 S\left(f_{0}-\beta_{n}\right) \leq 400 n^{6} R \varphi
$$

By using (29) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 S\left(f_{0}-\beta_{n}\right) \leq c_{5} \varphi \quad \text { if } \varphi \geq 0 \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (41) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{4}{R^{2}} P+2 S\left(f_{0}-\beta_{n}\right) \leq c_{6} \varphi \quad \text { if } \varphi \geq 0 \tag{43}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (22), (24), (30), (43) and Theorem 4.6 we have

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

for any $T<T_{2}$. Thus

$$
\varphi(x, t) \leq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right)
$$

and, in consequence of (20),

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{0}(x, t) \leq \beta_{n} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \tag{44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence the proof of Lemma 5.7 is complete.

Lemma 5.8. We have the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \geq \frac{3 n-2}{2(n-1)(n+2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \tag{45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. This is Lemma 4.3 in [8].
From Lemma 5.8 we get

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}-\frac{1}{n}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \geq \frac{(n-2)^{2}}{2 n(n-1)(n+2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{46}\\
& \left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}-\frac{1}{n}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \geq \frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

Lemma 5.9. Let $\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j}=R_{i j}-\frac{1}{n} R g_{i j}$. Then

$$
\begin{gather*}
S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}=\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j}\right|^{2} \geq 0,  \tag{47}\\
\frac{\partial S}{\partial t}=\Delta S-2\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}+4 R_{i j} R_{k l} R_{i k j l},  \tag{48}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)=\Delta\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-2\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}+\frac{2}{n}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{49}\\
+4 \stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j} R_{k l} R_{i k j l} .
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. This is Lemma 4.2 in [8].
Lemma 5.10. We have the inequality

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq & \Delta\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(n-1)(n+2)} \cdot\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{50}\\
& +c(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. This is a direct corollary of Lemmas 5.8 and 5.9.
Lemma 5.11. For $\gamma>0$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}=\Delta\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}-2\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2}+4 \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S  \tag{51}\\
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}}\right)=\Delta\left(\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}}\right)-\frac{\gamma(\gamma+1)}{R^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}-\frac{2 \gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}} S \tag{52}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)=\Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& -\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{\gamma+2}}-\frac{2}{R^{\gamma}}\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R-\frac{\gamma}{2 R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2}  \tag{53}\\
& -\frac{2 \gamma S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S
\end{align*}
$$

where $S=g^{i k} g^{j l} R_{i j} R_{k l}$.

Proof. From Lemma 3.1 we have

$$
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t}=\Delta R+2 S
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla_{i} R & =\nabla_{i}\left(\frac{\partial R}{\partial t}\right)=\nabla_{i}[\Delta R+2 S] \\
& =\nabla_{i}(\Delta R)+2 \nabla_{i} S=\Delta\left(\nabla_{i} R\right)-R_{i k} \nabla_{k} R+2 \nabla_{i} S, \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} & =\Delta\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}-2\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2}+4 \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S,  \tag{54}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}}\right) & =-\frac{\gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}} \frac{\partial R}{\partial t}=-\frac{\gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}}(\Delta R+2 S) \\
& =\Delta\left(\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}}\right)-\frac{\gamma(\gamma+1)}{R^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}-\frac{2 \gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}} S .
\end{align*}
$$

The third and fourth equations of (54) are (51) and (52) respectively.
Now, using (51) and (52), we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)= & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)-2 \nabla_{p}\left(\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}}\right) \cdot \nabla_{p}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}-\frac{\gamma(\gamma+1)}{R^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4} \\
& -\frac{2 \gamma S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}-\frac{2}{R^{\gamma}}\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{gathered}
-2 \nabla_{p}\left(\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}}\right) \cdot \nabla_{p}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}=\frac{4 \gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{k} \nabla_{i} R, \\
\nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{r}}\right)=\frac{2}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{k} \nabla_{i} R-\frac{\gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \nabla_{k} R, \\
\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)=\frac{2 \gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} \nabla_{i} R-\frac{\gamma^{2}}{R^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4},
\end{gathered}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)= & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right) \\
& +\frac{2 \gamma}{R^{\gamma+1}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} \nabla_{i} R-\frac{2}{R^{\gamma}}\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2} \\
& -\frac{\gamma}{R^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}-\frac{2 \gamma S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S,
\end{aligned}
$$

which actually is (53).
Lemma 5.12. If we define

$$
w=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+4\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right),
$$

then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{4 R} w^{2}+\frac{8}{n} R w \\
& +\frac{\tilde{c}(n)}{R}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)^{2}+\tilde{c}(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} \tag{55}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\tilde{c}(n)>0$ is a constant depending only on $n$.
Proof. We have

$$
\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} S-\frac{2}{n}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}
$$

Thus from (50) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq & \Delta \\
& \left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)  \tag{56}\\
& -\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} S+\frac{2}{n}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
& -\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(n-1)(n+2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+c(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, letting $\gamma=1$ and using (53) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)= & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{2 R^{3}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}-\frac{2}{R}\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R-\frac{1}{2 R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2} \\
& -\frac{2 S}{R^{2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right) \leq & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)  \tag{57}\\
& -\frac{1}{2 R^{3}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}+\frac{4}{R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S
\end{align*}
$$

By means of (56) and (57) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{2 R^{3}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4} \\
& +\frac{8}{n}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}+4 c(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3}, \\
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{R^{2}}{2 R^{3}}\left[w-4\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\right]^{2} \\
& +\frac{8}{n} R w-\frac{32}{n} R\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)+4 c(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} \\
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{4 R} w^{2}+\frac{8}{n} R w \\
& +\frac{\tilde{c}(n)}{R}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)^{2}+\tilde{c}(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 5.13. For any $T<T_{2}$, there exists a constant $c=c(T)>0$ such that

$$
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R} \leq \frac{c}{t}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T
$$

Proof. Let

$$
w=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+4\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) .
$$

Then from Lemma 5.12 we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{4 R} w^{2}+\frac{8}{n} R w \\
& +\frac{\tilde{c}(n)}{R}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)^{2}+\tilde{c}(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} \tag{58}
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
|\mathrm{Rm}|^{2}=|\mathrm{R} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)} R^{2}
$$

from Lemma 5.7 it follows that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{1}{R^{2}}|\mathrm{Rm}|^{2}=\frac{1}{R^{2}}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)} \leq \beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)} \\
\frac{1}{R^{2}}\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq \beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)} \quad \text { on } 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{59}
\end{gather*}
$$

If $0 \leq t \leq T<T_{2}$, then by (59) we get

$$
\frac{\tilde{c}(n)}{R}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)^{2} \leq \frac{\tilde{c}(n)}{R}\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{4} \cdot n^{4} \leq \frac{\hat{c}(n)}{R} R^{4}=\hat{c}(n) R^{3}
$$

where $\hat{c}(n)>0$ depends only on $n$ and $\beta_{n}$. We still have

$$
\tilde{c}(n)\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{3} \leq \hat{c}(n) R^{3}
$$

Thus by the above two equations (58) is reduced to
(60) $\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{4 R} w^{2}+\frac{8}{n} R w+c_{3} R^{3}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T$, which together with (29) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq \Delta w+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{4 R} w^{2}+c_{2} w+c_{4}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{61}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0<c_{2}, c_{4}<+\infty$ are constants depending on $T$. Let

$$
F(x, t)=t w(x, t)=t\left[\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+4\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\right] .
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} & \leq \Delta F+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{1}{4 t R} F^{2}+c_{2} F+c_{4} t+\frac{F}{t} \\
& \leq \Delta F+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{1}{4 t R} F^{2}+\frac{1+T c_{2}}{t} F+c_{4} T
\end{aligned}
$$

From (47) it follows that

$$
\frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}}=\frac{1}{t R}\left[F-4 t\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\right] \leq \frac{F}{t R}
$$

Finally we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{8 R^{2}} F-\frac{1}{8 t R} F^{2} \\
& +\frac{1+T c_{2}}{t} F+c_{4} T, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $c_{5}=1+T c_{2}$ and $c_{6}=c_{4} T$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{8 R^{2}} F \\
& +\frac{F}{t R}\left(c_{5} R+\frac{c_{6} t R}{F}-\frac{F}{8}\right), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T
\end{aligned}
$$

By using (29) again we get

$$
c_{5} R \leq c_{7}, \quad c_{6} t R \leq c_{8} \quad \text { on } 0 \leq t \leq T
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{8 R^{2}} F \\
& +\frac{F}{t R}\left(c_{7}+\frac{c_{8}}{F}-\frac{F}{8}\right), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{62}
\end{align*}
$$

By definition we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, 0) \equiv 0 \quad \text { on } M \tag{63}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then from (62), (63) and Lemma 4.11 it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t) \leq c, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{64}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $c>0$ depends on $T$. Thus we have

$$
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R} \leq \frac{c}{t}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T
$$

Lemma 5.14. We can find $\sigma>0$ and $c(\sigma)>0$ such that

$$
\frac{1}{R^{2-\sigma}}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq c(\sigma), \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2}
$$

Proof. Let $f_{\sigma}(x, t)=|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} / R^{2-\sigma}$. Then Lemma 5.5 implies that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial f \sigma}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta f_{\sigma}+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}-\frac{\sigma(1-\sigma)}{R^{4-\sigma}}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
& +\frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{1}{2} \sigma|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} S\right) \tag{65}
\end{align*}
$$

From Lemmas 5.6 and 5.7 it follows that

$$
\begin{gather*}
P \leq-\frac{1}{2 n} R^{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2}  \tag{66}\\
S \leq \frac{1}{n} R^{2}+\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j}\right|^{2} \leq\left(\frac{1}{n}+c(n)\right) R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2}
\end{gather*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{\sigma}{2}\left|\circ_{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}\right|^{2} S\right) \\
& \quad \leq \frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left[-\frac{1}{2 n} R^{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}+\frac{\sigma}{2}\left(\frac{1}{n}+c(n)\right) R^{2}\left|\circ_{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}\right|^{2}\right] \\
& \quad \leq \frac{4}{R^{1-\sigma}}\left|\circ_{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}\right|^{2}\left[-\frac{1}{2 n}+\widetilde{c(n) \sigma}\right], \\
& \frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{\sigma}{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} S\right) \leq \frac{4}{R^{1-\sigma}}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}\left[-\frac{1}{2 n}+\widetilde{c(n)} \sigma\right], \\
& 0 \leq t<T_{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now if we choose $\sigma$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\sigma<\frac{1}{2 n c(n)} \tag{68}
\end{equation*}
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{\sigma}{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} S\right) \leq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{69}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (69) into (65) gives

$$
\frac{\partial f_{\sigma}}{\partial t} \leq \Delta f_{\sigma}+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}-\frac{\sigma(1-\sigma)}{R^{2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} f_{\sigma}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial f_{\sigma}}{\partial t} \leq \Delta f_{\sigma}+\left|\nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}\right|^{2}+\left[1-\sigma(1-\sigma) f_{\sigma}\right] \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{70}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since

$$
f_{\sigma}(x, 0)=\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2-\sigma}}(x, 0)=R^{\sigma}(x, 0) f_{0}(x, 0) \leq \beta_{n} R^{\sigma}(x, 0),
$$

from (8) it follows that

$$
\begin{gather*}
f_{\sigma}(x, 0) \leq \beta_{n} c_{0}^{\sigma} \quad \text { on } M,  \tag{71}\\
f_{\sigma}(x, t)=\frac{\mid \stackrel{\circ}{\left.\mathrm{R} m\right|^{2}}}{R^{2-\sigma}}(x, t)=R^{\sigma}(x, t) f_{0}(x, t)
\end{gather*}
$$

By using (44) we find

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \beta_{n} R^{\sigma}(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \tag{72}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $T<T_{2}$ we use (29) and (72) to get

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \beta_{n} n^{2 \sigma} c_{1}(T)^{\sigma / 2} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] . \tag{73}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\sigma$ satisfies (68) and $\widetilde{c(n)}=\frac{1}{n}+c(n) \geq \frac{1}{n}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\sigma<\frac{1}{2} . \tag{74}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[1-\sigma(1-\sigma) f_{\sigma}\right] \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} \leq 0 \quad \text { if } f_{\sigma} \geq \frac{1}{\sigma(1-\sigma)} \tag{75}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (70), (71), (73), (75) and Theorem 4.6 we know that

$$
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \max \left[\beta_{n} c_{0}^{\sigma}, \frac{1}{\sigma(1-\sigma)}\right] \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Since $T<T_{2}$ is arbitrary, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \max \left[\beta_{n} c_{0}^{\sigma}, \frac{1}{\sigma(1-\sigma)}\right], \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{76}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Lemma 5.14 it follows that if $\sigma$ satisfies (68), then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{R^{2-\sigma}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq n^{2} c(\sigma), \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{77}
\end{equation*}
$$

which holds since $S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}=\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j}\right|^{2} \leq n^{2}\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j k l}\right|^{2}$.
Lemma 5.15. We have the inequalities:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j} R_{k l} R_{i k j l} \leq R\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2},  \tag{78}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq  \tag{79}\\
+\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
+4 R\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2}, \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)=\Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)-\frac{2}{R^{3}}\left|R \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R-\nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2} \\
+\frac{4}{R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S-\frac{2 S}{R^{2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} .
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. From Lemma 5.7 one can check directly that

$$
\stackrel{\circ}{R}_{i j} R_{k l} R_{i k j l} \leq R\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right),
$$

or one can see [8, p. 60].
Now (79) follows directly from (46), (49), and (78); (80) follows from (53).

We want to prove the following important lemma:
Lemma 5.16. For any $\eta>0$, we can find a constant $c(\eta)>0$ depending only on $n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}$, and $\eta$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \eta R^{3}+c(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2} \tag{81}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Since

$$
\frac{4}{R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S=\frac{8}{R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot R_{j k} \nabla_{i} R_{j k}
$$

we have

$$
\frac{4}{R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S \leq \frac{2}{R^{2}}\left|R_{j k}\right|^{2}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+8\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}=\frac{2 S}{R^{2}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+8\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}
$$

which reduces (80) to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right) \leq \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}\right)+8\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \tag{82}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Lemma 5.14 it follows that if $0<\delta<1 /[2 n \widetilde{c(n)}]$, then we can find a constant $c_{1}=c_{1}\left(\beta_{n}, c_{0}, \delta\right)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2} \leq c_{1} R^{2-\delta}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{83}
\end{equation*}
$$

(actually this comes from (77)). By (79) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq & \Delta\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}  \tag{84}\\
& +4 c_{1} R^{3-\delta}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $\frac{\partial R}{\partial t}=\Delta R+2 S, S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2} \geq 0$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t} \geq \Delta R+\frac{2}{n} R^{2}  \tag{85}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R^{2}= \\
2 R \frac{\partial R}{\partial t}=2 R \Delta R+4 R S \\
=
\end{gather*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial R^{2}}{\partial t} \geq \Delta R^{2}-2\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{n} R^{3} \tag{86}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (82), (84), and (86) it follows that for any $\eta>0$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{2}\right] \\
& \quad \leq \Delta\left[\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{2}\right]+4 c_{1} c_{3} R^{3-\delta}+2 \eta\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{87}\\
& \quad+\left[8-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} c_{3}\right]\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}-\frac{4}{n} \eta R^{3}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2}
\end{align*}
$$

If we choose $c_{3}$ such that

$$
8-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} c_{3} \leq-\frac{4 \eta(n-1)(n+2)}{3 n-2}
$$

then from Lemma 5.8 we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
{\left[8-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} c_{3}\right]\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \leq-\frac{4 \eta(n-1)(n+2)}{3 n-2}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}} \\
\leq-2 \eta\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
{\left[8-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} c_{3}\right]\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}+2 \eta\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq 0}
\end{gathered}
$$

and therefore, in consequence of (87),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{2}\right] \\
& \quad \leq \Delta\left[\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{2}\right]+4 c_{1} c_{3} R^{3-\delta}-\frac{4}{n} \eta R^{3}, \\
& 0 \leq t<T_{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
F=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{2}-C R .
$$

Then from (85) and (88) we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+4 c_{1} c_{3} R^{3-\delta}-\frac{4}{n} \eta R^{3}-\frac{2}{n} C R^{2}, \\
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+\left[4 c_{1} c_{3} R^{1-\delta}-\frac{4}{n} \eta R-\frac{2}{n} C\right] R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} . \tag{89}
\end{gather*}
$$

If we choose $C$ large enough, then

$$
4 c_{1} c_{3} R^{1-\delta}-\frac{4}{n} \eta R-\frac{2}{n} C \leq 0 \text { for all } R \geq 0,
$$

where $C$ depends only on $\beta_{n}, c_{0}, \delta, \eta, c_{1}$, and $c_{3}$. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F, \quad 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{90}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the definition of $F$,

$$
F \leq \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) .
$$

Suppose $T_{0}$ is the constant in Lemma 5.3. Then from Lemma 5.13 we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R} \leq \frac{c_{5}\left(c_{0}, n\right)}{t}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0} \tag{91}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R} \leq c_{6}(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0} \tag{92}
\end{equation*}
$$

and from Theorem 3.4 it follows that

$$
0 \leq S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2} \leq c_{7}\left(c_{0}, n\right), \quad 0 \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0} .
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t) \leq c_{8}\left(n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}, \eta\right), \quad \eta \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0}, x \in M . \tag{93}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $T<T_{2}$, by (28) and Lemma 5.13 we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t) \leq \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq c_{9}\left(n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}, \eta, T\right) \quad \text { on } \eta \leq t \leq T \tag{94}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (90), (93), (94) and Theorem 4.6 we have

$$
F(x, t) \leq c_{8}\left(n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}, \eta\right), \quad \eta \leq t \leq T
$$

Since $T<T_{2}$ is arbitrary, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
F(x, t) \leq c_{8}, \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2},  \tag{95}\\
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R}+c_{3}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{2}-C R \leq c_{8}(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2}, \\
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \eta R^{3}+C R^{2}+c_{8}(\eta) R, \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2}
\end{gather*}
$$

If we replace $\eta$ by $\frac{1}{2} \eta$, then

$$
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \frac{1}{2} \eta R^{3}+C R^{2}+c_{8}(\eta) R, \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2}
$$

and therefore

$$
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \eta R^{3}+C(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2} .
$$

Note. $C(\eta)>0$ in (81) depends only on $n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}, \eta$, and is independent of $T_{2}$.

Lemma 5.17. There exists a constant $C>0$ depending only on $n, \beta_{n}$, and $c_{0}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R(x, t) \leq C \quad \text { on } 0 \leq t<T_{2} \tag{96}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. From Lemma 5.4 and (13) we know respectively that $R(x, t)>0$ on $0 \leq t<T_{2}$, and that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq c_{1}\left(n, c_{0}\right) \quad \text { on } 0 \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0} \tag{97}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $\eta>0$, by using Lemma 5.16 we can find a constant $C(\eta)>0$ such that

$$
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right| \leq \frac{1}{2} \eta^{2} R^{3 / 2}+C(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2} .
$$

If $R_{\text {max }} \rightarrow \infty$ as $t \rightarrow T_{2}$, we can find $\theta$ such that $\eta \leq \theta<T_{2}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
C(\eta) \leq \frac{1}{2} \eta^{2} R_{\max }^{3 / 2}, \quad \text { while } t=\theta \tag{98}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right| \leq \eta^{2} R_{\max }^{3 / 2} \quad \text { at } t=\theta \tag{99}
\end{equation*}
$$

Fix a point $x \in M$ such that

$$
R(x, \theta) \geq(1-\eta) \operatorname{Max}_{y \in M} R(y, \theta)
$$

Then on any geodesic out of $x$ of length at most $S=\frac{1}{\eta} R_{\max }^{1 / 2}$ we have $R \geq(1-2 \eta) R_{\max }$, and from Lemma 5.7 we know that there exists a fixed $\varepsilon_{0}>0$ such that $R_{i j} \geq \varepsilon_{0} R g_{i j}$. Thus on any geodesic out of $x$ of length at most $S=\frac{1}{\eta} R_{\max }^{1 / 2}$ we have

$$
R_{i j} \geq \varepsilon_{0}(1-2 \eta) R_{\max } g_{i j}
$$

If $\eta>0$ is small enough, it follows that every geodesic from $x$ of length $S=\frac{1}{\eta} R_{\max }^{1 / 2}$ has a conjugate point by the well-known theorem of Myers, which can be found in [Theorem 1.26, Cheeger and Ebin [2]]. Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{\theta}(x, y) \leq \frac{1}{\eta} R_{\max }^{1 / 2} \quad \forall y \in M . \tag{100}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\theta<T_{2}$, Assumption A of $\S 4$ holds on $M \times[0, \theta]$. By using Lemma 4.1 we know that $d s_{\theta}^{2}$ is equivalent to $d s_{0}^{2}$. Since $M$ is a complete noncompact manifold with respect to $d s_{0}^{2}, M$ is a complete noncompact manifold with respect to $d s_{\theta}^{2}$; therefore (100) is impossible. This means that (98) cannot be true for any $\theta \in\left[\eta, T_{2}\right)$, so that

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
C(\eta)>\frac{1}{2} \eta^{2} R_{\max }^{3 / 2}, & \eta \leq t<T_{2} \\
R_{\max } \leq\left(\frac{2 C(\eta)}{\eta^{2}}\right)^{2 / 3}, & \eta \leq t<T_{2}
\end{array}
$$

Thus we can find $\tilde{C}(\eta)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq \tilde{C}(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<T_{2} . \tag{101}
\end{equation*}
$$

Fix $0<\eta \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0}$. Then (97) and (101) imply the lemma.
Proof of Theorem 5.2. Now we are going to prove the long time existence theorem. We need to prove that $T_{1}=+\infty$.

Suppose $T_{1}<+\infty$, from (15) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<T_{0} \leq T_{1}<+\infty . \tag{102}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the definition of $T_{1}$ in (14), for any $\varepsilon>0$ we can find a constant

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{1}-\varepsilon<T_{2} \leq T_{1} \tag{103}
\end{equation*}
$$

and a solution $g_{i j}(x, t)$ of the evolution equation on $M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right)$ such that for any $T<T_{2}$, the solution $g_{i j}(x, t)$ satisfies Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times[0, T]$, and (13) holds on $M \times\left[0, \frac{1}{2} T_{0}\right]$. Thus from Lemmas 5.4 and 5.17 we know that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
R_{i j k l}(x, t)>0  \tag{104}\\
0<R(x, t) \leq C
\end{array} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) .\right.
$$

By (59) and (104) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq\left[\beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right] C^{2} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \tag{105}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (104) and (105) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R_{i j i j}(x, t) \leq\left[\beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right]^{1 / 2} C \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{2}\right) \tag{106}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we consider the evolution equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \tilde{g}_{i j}(x, t)=-2 \tilde{R}_{i j}(x, t), \quad \tilde{\partial}_{i j}(x, 0)=g_{i j}\left(x, T_{1}-\varepsilon\right) \tag{107}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $T_{1}-\varepsilon<T_{2}$, from (106) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R_{i j i j}\left(x, T_{1}-\varepsilon\right) \leq\left[\beta_{n}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right]^{1 / 2} C \tag{108}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C$ is independent of $\varepsilon$.
From Theorem 3.4 we know that (107) has a solution $\tilde{g}_{i j}(x, t)$ on $0 \leq$ $t<\delta, \delta=\delta\left(n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}, C\right)$ depending only on $n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}$, and $C$; in particular, $\delta$ is independent of $\varepsilon$. By Theorem 3.4 we still have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{M}\left|\nabla^{m} \tilde{R}_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq \tilde{c}_{m+1} / t^{m}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq \delta, x \in M, m \geq 0 \tag{109}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define

$$
\begin{align*}
g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)=g_{i j}(x, t), & 0 \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon  \tag{110}\\
g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)=\tilde{g}_{i j}\left(x, t-T_{1}+\varepsilon\right), & T_{1}-\varepsilon<t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta
\end{align*}
$$

Then $g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)>0$ on $M \times\left[0, T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta\right]$, and

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}^{*}(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta  \tag{111}\\
g_{i j}^{*}(x, 0)=g_{i j}(x) \quad \text { on } M
\end{gather*}
$$

By the regularity theorem of parabolic equation we know that

$$
g_{i j}^{*}(x, t) \in C^{\infty} \quad \text { on } M \times\left[0, T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta\right]
$$

Thus $g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)$ is a solution of evolution equation (9) on $M \times\left[0, T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta\right]$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{i j}^{*}(x, t) \equiv g_{i j}(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon . \tag{112}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\delta>0$ depends only on $n, \beta_{n}, c_{0}$ and $C$, with $C$ depending only on $n, \beta_{n}$ and $c_{0}$, thus $\delta>0$ depends only on $n, \beta_{n}$ and $c_{0}$. If we choose $\varepsilon>0$ small enough such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\varepsilon \leq \min \left\{\frac{\delta}{2}, \frac{T_{0}}{2}\right\} \tag{113}
\end{equation*}
$$

then from (15), (112), and (113) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{i j}^{*}(x, t) \equiv g_{i j}(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0} . \tag{114}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $g_{i j}(x, t)$ satisfies (13) on $M \times\left[0, \frac{1}{2} T_{0}\right], g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)$ also satisfies (13) on $M \times\left[0, \frac{1}{2} T_{0}\right]$.

Because $T_{1}-\varepsilon<T_{2}$, by the definition of $g_{i j}(x, t)$ and (112) we know that both $g_{i j}(x, t)$ and $g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)$ satisfy Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times\left[0, T_{1}-\varepsilon\right]$. Therefore we get the following:

$$
\begin{align*}
& 0<R_{i j i j}^{*}(x, 0) \leq k_{0}, \quad x \in M, \\
& \left|R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{1}^{*}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon,  \tag{115}\\
& \int_{0}^{T_{1}-\varepsilon}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right| d t \leq c_{2}^{*}, \quad x \in M .
\end{align*}
$$

From (109) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq \tilde{c}_{1} \quad \text { on } T_{1}-\varepsilon \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta,  \tag{116}\\
& \left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq \tilde{c}_{2} /\left(t-T_{1}+\varepsilon\right), \quad T_{1}-\varepsilon \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta .
\end{align*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{T_{1}-\varepsilon}^{T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right| d t \leq \int_{T_{1}-\varepsilon}^{T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta} \frac{\tilde{c}_{2}^{1 / 2}}{\sqrt{t-T_{1}+\varepsilon}} d t=c_{3}<+\infty . \tag{117}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (115), (116), and (117) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
& 0<R_{i j i j}^{*}(x, 0) \leq k_{0}, \quad x \in M, \\
& \left|R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq \max \left\{c_{1}^{*}, \tilde{c}_{1}\right\}, \quad x \in M, 0 \leq t \leq T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta,  \tag{118}\\
& \int_{0}^{T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta}\left|\nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}^{*}(x, t)\right| d t \leq c_{2}^{*}+c_{3} \quad \forall x \in M .
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore $g_{i j}^{*}(x, t)$ satisfies Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times\left[0, T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta\right]$ and satisfies (13) on $M \times\left[0, \frac{1}{2} T_{0}\right]$. Thus from (14) and (113) we know respectively that $T_{1} \geq T_{1}-\varepsilon+\delta$, and that $T_{1} \geq T_{1}+\delta / 2>T_{1}$. Since this is impossible, $T_{1}=+\infty$ and we can find a solution of evolution equation (9) on $M \times[0,+\infty)$. Hence the proof of Theorem 5.2 is complete.

Corollary 5.18. Suppose $g_{i j}(x, t)>0$ is the metric constructed in Theorem 5.2 on $M \times[0,+\infty)$. We still have

$$
\begin{align*}
& R_{i j k l}(x, t)>0, \\
& 0<R(x, t) \leq C, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty,  \tag{119}\\
& |\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta_{n} R^{2},
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{M}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}(x, t)\right|^{2} \leq c_{m+1} / t^{m}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0}, \quad x \in M, m \geq 0 \tag{120}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C>0$ and $c_{m+1}>0$ are constants depending only on $n, \beta_{n}$ and $c_{0}$. Moreover, for any $0<T<+\infty, g_{i j}(x, t)$ satisfies Assumption A of $\S 4$ on $M \times[0, T]$.

Proof. We can prove this corollary by using Lemmas 5.4, 5.7, and 5.17, and (112) directly.

## 6. Controlling the scalar curvature

We have shown in the last section that the scalar curvature of $M$ is positive and bounded from above for all time $0 \leq t<+\infty$. In this section we want to show that the scalar curvature $R$ actually tends to zero as time $t \rightarrow+\infty$.

Suppose $M$ is an $n$-dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with metric $g_{i j}(x)>0$. Then the curvature of $M$ satisfies the following condition:

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta R^{2}, \quad 0<R \leq c_{0} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\beta$ and $c_{0}$ are constants and $0<\beta \leq \delta_{n} / 2 n(n-1)$.
Now consider the evolution equation on $M$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)=-2 R_{i j}(x, t)  \tag{2}\\
& g_{i j}(x, 0)=g_{i j}(x), \quad x \in M
\end{align*}
$$

From Theorem 5.2 we can find a solution of this evolution equation for all time $0 \leq t<+\infty$ and the solution satisfies the properties mentioned in Corollary 5.18. Thus we can find a constant $C>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta R^{2}, \quad 0<R(x, t) \leq C \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $0 \leq t<+\infty$.
Let $0 \leq \sigma<\frac{1}{2}$ and $f_{\sigma}(x, t)=\left(\left|\circ_{\mathrm{R}}\right|^{2} / R^{2-\sigma}\right)(x, t)$. Then from Lemma 5.5 it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial f_{\sigma}}{\partial t}= & \Delta f_{\sigma}+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}-\frac{\sigma(1-\sigma)}{R^{4-\sigma}}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{4}\\
& -\frac{2}{R^{4-\sigma}}\left|R \nabla_{p} R_{i j k l}-R_{i j k l} \nabla_{p} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{\sigma}{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} S\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

From Corollary 5.18 we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j}>0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty, \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{n} R^{2} \leq S \leq R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (3) and Lemma 5.6 we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
P \leq-\frac{1}{2 n}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(P+\frac{\sigma}{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} S\right) & \leq \frac{4}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(-\frac{1}{2 n}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} R^{2}+\frac{\sigma}{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} R^{2}\right) \\
& =\frac{2 R^{2}}{R^{3-\sigma}}\left(\sigma-\frac{1}{n}\right)|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}=2\left(\sigma-\frac{1}{n}\right) R f_{\sigma}
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting the above equation into (4) gives
(8) $\frac{\partial f_{\sigma}}{\partial t} \leq \Delta f_{\sigma}+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}-2\left(\frac{1}{n}-\sigma\right) R f_{\sigma}-\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} \sigma(1-\sigma) f_{\sigma}$.

Lemma 6.1. There exists a constant $c_{1}>0$ depending only on $c_{0}, n$, and $\sigma$ such that for $0<\sigma \leq 1 /(2 n)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2-\sigma}} \leq \frac{\beta c_{1}}{(t+1)^{\sigma}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Because $0<\sigma \leq 1 /(2 n)$, from (8) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial f_{\sigma}}{\partial t} \leq \Delta f_{\sigma}+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} f_{\sigma}-\frac{1}{n} R f_{\sigma} . \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi(t)=\left(\frac{1}{c_{0}}+\frac{t}{n \sigma}\right)^{-1}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
\psi(t)=\beta \varphi(t)^{\sigma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{gathered}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t}=\beta \sigma \varphi(t)^{\sigma-1} \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\beta \sigma \varphi(t)^{\sigma-1}\left[-\frac{1}{n \sigma}\left(\frac{1}{c_{0}}+\frac{t}{n \sigma}\right)^{-2}\right] \\
&=-\frac{1}{n} \beta \varphi(t)^{\sigma-1} \varphi(t)^{2}=-\frac{1}{n} \beta \varphi(t)^{\sigma+1}, \\
& \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t}=-\frac{1}{n} \varphi \psi, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{11}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t}=\Delta \psi+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} \psi-\frac{1}{n} \varphi \psi \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (8), (12) and $0<\sigma \leq 1 /(2 n)$ it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(f_{\sigma}-\psi\right) \leq & \Delta\left(f_{\sigma}-\psi\right)+\frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(f_{\sigma}-\psi\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \varphi \psi-\frac{1}{n} R f_{\sigma}-\sigma(1-\sigma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} f_{\sigma}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $F(x, t)=f_{\sigma}(x, t)-\psi(t)$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
Q(F, x, t)= & \frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(f_{\sigma}-\psi\right)+\frac{1}{n} \varphi \psi-\frac{1}{n} R f_{\sigma} \\
& -\sigma(1-\sigma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} f_{\sigma} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+Q(F, x, t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{m}|^{2} \leq \beta R^{2}$ on $0 \leq t<+\infty$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
f_{\sigma}(x, t)=\frac{1}{R^{2-\sigma}}|\stackrel{\circ}{R} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta R^{\sigma} \\
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \beta R^{\sigma}(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{14}
\end{gather*}
$$

In particular,

$$
f_{\sigma}(x, 0) \leq \beta R^{\sigma}(x, 0) \leq \beta c_{0}^{\sigma}
$$

by (1). Since $\varphi(0)=c_{0}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, 0)=f_{\sigma}(x, 0)-\psi(0) \leq \beta c_{0}^{\sigma}-\beta \varphi(0)^{\sigma} \leq 0, \quad x \in M \tag{15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore if $F(x, t) \geq 0$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 0 \leq F(x, t)=f_{\sigma}(x, t)-\psi(t) \leq \beta R^{\sigma}(x, t)-\beta \varphi(t)^{\sigma}, \\
& \varphi(t) \leq R(x, t), \\
& Q(F, x, t) \leq \frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F+\frac{1}{n} R \psi-\frac{1}{n} R f_{\sigma} \\
&-\sigma(1-\sigma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} f_{\sigma} \\
& \leq \frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{1}{n} R F-\sigma(1-\sigma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F \\
&-\sigma(1-\sigma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} \psi \\
& \leq \frac{2(1-\sigma)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\sigma(1-\sigma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus if $F>0$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(F, x, t) \leq \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} F\right|^{2}}{\sigma(1-\sigma) F} \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose $m \geq 3$ is an odd integer, and define $H(x, t)=F(x, t)^{m}$. Then from (15) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(x, 0) \leq 0 . \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $H(x, t)>0$, then $F(x, t)>0$, and we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial H}{\partial t} & =F^{m-1} \cdot m \frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq m F^{m-1}[\Delta F+Q(F, x, t)] \\
& =\Delta H-m(m-1) F^{m-2}\left|\nabla_{k} F\right|^{2}+m F^{m-1} Q(F, x, t) \\
& \leq \Delta H-m(m-1) F^{m-2}\left|\nabla_{k} F\right|^{2}+\frac{m}{\sigma(1-\sigma)} F^{m-2}\left|\nabla_{k} F\right|^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

If $m \geq 1+1 /[\sigma(1-\sigma)]$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial H}{\partial t} \leq \Delta H \quad \text { for } H \geq 0 \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (3) and (14) we know that

$$
F(x, t) \leq f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \beta R^{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \beta c^{\sigma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(x, t) \leq \beta^{m} c^{m \sigma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{19}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (17), (18), (19) and Lemma 4.5 we get

$$
H(x, t) \leq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

thus

$$
\begin{gather*}
F(x, t) \leq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \psi(t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
f_{\sigma}(x, t) \leq \beta\left(\frac{1}{c_{0}}+\frac{t}{n \sigma}\right)^{-\sigma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{20}
\end{gather*}
$$

Since

$$
\left(\frac{1}{c_{0}}+\frac{t}{n \sigma}\right)^{-\sigma} \leq \frac{c_{1}\left(n, c_{0}, \sigma\right)}{(t+1)^{\sigma}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}}{R^{2-\sigma}}(x, t) \leq \frac{\beta c_{1}}{(t+1)^{\sigma}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{21}
\end{equation*}
$$

which completes the proof of Lemma 6.1.

Now we want to estimate the gradient of the scalar curvature. From Lemma 5.11 we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)= & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)  \tag{22}\\
& -\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{\gamma+2}}-\frac{2}{R^{\gamma}}\left|\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R-\frac{\gamma}{2 R} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{j} R\right|^{2} \\
& -\frac{2 \gamma S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{4}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Let $1<\gamma<2$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{4}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S & =\frac{8}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot R_{j k} \nabla_{i} R_{j k} \\
& \leq \frac{2}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|R_{j k}\right|^{2}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{16}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
& =\frac{2 S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{16}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq \frac{2 \gamma S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{16}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{4}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{i} R \cdot \nabla_{i} S-\frac{2 \gamma S}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \frac{16}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (23) into (22) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right) \leq \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right)+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}\right) \\
&-\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{\gamma+2}}+\frac{16}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}  \tag{24}\\
& 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

From (79) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq & \Delta\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}  \tag{25}\\
& +4 R\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Since $\partial R / \partial t=\Delta R+2 S$,

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R^{1-\gamma}=\Delta R^{1-\gamma}-\frac{\gamma(\gamma-1)}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{2(1-\gamma) S}{R^{\gamma}}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}[ & \left.R^{1-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\right] \\
& \leq \Delta\left[R^{1-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\right]-2 \nabla_{k} R^{1-\gamma} \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)  \tag{26}\\
& -\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}+4 R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \\
& -\frac{\gamma(\gamma-1)}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+\frac{2(1-\gamma)}{R^{\gamma}} S\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Let $H=R^{1-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \nabla_{k} H=R^{1-\gamma} \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)+\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \frac{(1-\gamma)}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k} R, \\
& \frac{1}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{R} \nabla_{k} H+\frac{(\gamma-1)}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \nabla_{k} R, \\
&-2 \nabla_{k} R^{1-\gamma} \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)=\frac{2(\gamma-1)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H \\
&+\frac{2(\gamma-1)^{2}}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}, \\
&-2 \nabla_{k} R^{1-\gamma} \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \\
&= \frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H+\frac{\gamma-2}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H \\
&+\frac{2(\gamma-1)^{2}}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
&= \frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H+\frac{(\gamma-2)}{R} \nabla_{k} R \\
& \cdot\left[R^{1-\gamma} \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)+\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \frac{(1-\gamma)}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k} R\right] \\
&+\frac{2(\gamma-1)^{2}}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
&= \frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H+\frac{\gamma-2}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} S-\frac{2(\gamma-2)}{n R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
&+\frac{(2-\gamma)(\gamma-1)}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
&+\frac{2(\gamma-1)^{2}}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

## Since

$$
\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} S=\frac{2}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k} R \cdot R_{i j} \nabla_{k} R_{i j} \leq \frac{2}{R^{\gamma}}\left|R_{i j}\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{k} R\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{k} R_{i j}\right|
$$

by Lemma 5.8 we get

$$
\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \leq \frac{2(n-1)(n+2)}{3 n-2}\left|\nabla_{k} R_{i j}\right|^{2}
$$

Thus

$$
\left|\nabla_{k} R\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{k} R_{i j}\right| \leq\left(\frac{2(n-1)(n+2)}{3 n-2}\right)^{1 / 2}\left|\nabla_{k} R_{i j}\right|^{2}
$$

From (6) it follows that $\left|R_{i j}\right|^{2} \leq R^{2}$; thus

$$
\frac{1}{R^{\gamma}} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} S \leq \frac{2}{R^{\gamma}}\left|R_{i j}\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{k} R\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{k} R_{i j}\right| \leq \frac{c_{1}(n)}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2},
$$

where $c_{1}>0$ depends only on $n$.
Using (27) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
&-2 \nabla_{k} R^{1-\gamma} \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq \frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H+\frac{(2-\gamma) c_{1}}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
&+\frac{c_{2}}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
& c_{2}=\gamma(\gamma-1)
\end{aligned}
$$

From (26) it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial H}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta H+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H+\frac{(2-\gamma) c_{1}}{R^{\gamma-1}}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
& +\frac{c_{2}}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
& +4 R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{\gamma(\gamma-1)}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
& +\frac{2(1-\gamma)}{R^{\gamma}} S\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By (6) we have

$$
\frac{2(1-\gamma)}{R^{\gamma}} S\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \leq 2|\gamma-1| \cdot R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial H}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta H+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H+\left[(2-\gamma) c_{1}-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)}\right] R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
& +6 R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

If we choose $1<\gamma<2$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<2-\gamma \leq \frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2) c_{1}} \tag{28}
\end{equation*}
$$

then

$$
(2-\gamma) c_{1}-\frac{2(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} \leq-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial H}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta H+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} H-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \\
& +6 R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \tag{29}
\end{align*}
$$

We still have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} R^{3-\gamma}=(3-\gamma) R^{2-\gamma} \frac{\partial R}{\partial t}=(3-\gamma) R^{2-\gamma}(\Delta R+2 S) \\
&=\Delta R^{3-\gamma}-(3-\gamma)(2-\gamma) R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}+2(3-\gamma) S R^{2-\gamma}, \\
& \frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} R^{3-\gamma}=(3-\gamma) \gamma R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}, \\
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} R^{3-\gamma}= \Delta R^{3-\gamma}+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} R^{3-\gamma}-2(3-\gamma) R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
&+2(3-\gamma) S R^{2-\gamma} .
\end{aligned}
$$

From (6) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R^{3-\gamma} \geq & \Delta R^{3-\gamma}+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} R^{3-\gamma}-2(3-\gamma) R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \\
& +\frac{2}{n}(3-\gamma) R^{4-\gamma} . \tag{30}
\end{align*}
$$

Now we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t)=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}+\alpha R^{1-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\eta R^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty, \tag{31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\alpha>0$ and $\eta>0$ are two constants to be defined later. Then by (24), (29), and (30) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}} \\
& +\left[16-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} \alpha\right] R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}+6 \alpha R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)  \tag{32}\\
& +2 \eta(3-\gamma) R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}-\frac{2}{n}(3-\gamma) \eta R^{4-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{align*}
$$

If we choose $\alpha$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha \geq \frac{32 n(3 n-2)}{(n-2)^{2}} \tag{33}
\end{equation*}
$$

then

$$
\begin{gather*}
16-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{n(3 n-2)} \alpha \leq-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{2 n(3 n-2)} \alpha,  \tag{34}\\
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}} \\
-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{2 n(3 n-2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2}+2 \eta(3-\gamma) R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}  \tag{35}\\
+6 \alpha R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{2}{n}(3-\gamma) \eta R^{4-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{gather*}
$$

By definition we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}=F+\eta R^{3-\gamma}-\alpha R^{1-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \\
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2 \gamma}} \geq \frac{F^{2}}{2}-\left[\eta R^{3-\gamma}-\alpha R^{1-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\right]^{2} \\
\geq \frac{F^{2}}{2}-2 \eta^{2} R^{6-2 \gamma}-2 \alpha^{2} R^{2-2 \gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)^{2}
\end{gathered}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{\gamma+2}} \leq & -\frac{\gamma}{4}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}}+\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \eta^{2} R^{4-\gamma} \\
& +\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \alpha^{2} R^{-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)^{2}  \tag{36}\\
& \leq-\frac{\gamma}{4}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}}+\frac{\gamma}{2}(2-\gamma) \eta^{2} R^{4-\gamma} \\
& +\frac{\gamma}{2}(2-\gamma) \alpha^{2} R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

## Using Lemma 5.8 we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{2 n(3 n-2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R_{j k}\right|^{2} \leq-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{4 n(n-1)(n+2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (36) and (37) into (35) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}}-\frac{\gamma}{4}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}} \\
& +\left[2 \eta(3-\gamma)-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{4 n(n-1)(n+2)}\right] R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}  \tag{38}\\
& +\left[6 \alpha+\frac{\gamma}{2}(2-\gamma) \alpha^{2}\right] R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right) \\
& +\left[\frac{\gamma}{2}(2-\gamma) \eta^{2}-\frac{2}{n}(3-\gamma) \eta\right] R^{4-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{align*}
$$

Choose $\eta>0$ small enough such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\eta \leq \min \left\{\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{16(3-\gamma) n(n-1)(n+2)}, \frac{(3-\gamma)}{n \gamma(2-\gamma)}\right\} \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{gathered}
2 \eta(3-\gamma)-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{4 n(n-1)(n+2)} \leq-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{8 n(n-1)(n+2)} \\
\gamma(2-\gamma) \eta^{2}-\frac{2}{n}(3-\gamma) \eta \leq-\frac{1}{n}(3-\gamma) \eta \leq-\frac{1}{n} \eta
\end{gathered}
$$

Thus from (38) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}} \\
& -\frac{\gamma}{4}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}}-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{8 n(n-1)(n+2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}  \tag{40}\\
& +\left[6 \alpha+(2-\gamma) \alpha^{2}\right] R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{n} \eta R^{4-\gamma}, \\
& 0 \leq t<\infty .
\end{align*}
$$

By the definition of $F$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}}+\frac{\alpha}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}-\eta R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
&-\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}} \leq-\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F+\frac{\alpha}{R^{\gamma+1}}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
& \leq-\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F+\alpha R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
&-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{4}}{R^{2+\gamma}} \leq-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F+\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \alpha R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting the last equation into (40) gives (41)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}} \\
& +\left[\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma)-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{8 n(n-1)(n+2)}\right] \alpha R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2} \\
& +\left[6 \alpha+(2-\gamma) \alpha^{2}\right] R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{n} \eta R^{4-\gamma}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
0<2-\gamma \leq \frac{(n-2)^{2}}{8 n(n-1)(n+2)}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma)-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{8 n(n-1)(n+2)} \leq-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} \\
& \frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F \\
&-\frac{\gamma}{8}(2-\gamma) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}}-\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}  \tag{42}\\
&+\left[6 \alpha+(2-\gamma) \alpha^{2}\right] R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{n} \eta R^{4-\gamma}
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
R^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{k} R\right|^{2}=R F-\alpha R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)+\eta R^{4-\gamma}
$$

from (42) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F-\frac{\gamma}{8}(2-\gamma) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}} \\
& -\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} R F+8 \alpha^{2} R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)  \tag{43}\\
& -\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} \alpha \eta R^{4-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{align*}
$$

Lemma 6.2. Suppose $m>0, C>0$ and $\varphi(x)=x+C / x^{m}, 0<x<$ $+\infty$. Then

$$
\varphi(x) \geq\left(1+\frac{1}{m}\right) m^{1 /(m+1)} C^{1 /(m+1)}, \quad 0<x<+\infty
$$

Proof. Let $\varphi^{\prime}(x)=0$. Then $\varphi^{\prime}(x)=1-m C / x^{m+1}=0$, and the solution is $x_{0}=[m C]^{1 /(m+1)}$. We get

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi(x) \geq \varphi\left(x_{0}\right)=x_{0}\left(1+\frac{C}{x_{0}^{m+1}}\right)=\left(1+\frac{1}{m}\right) x_{0}, \\
\varphi(x) \geq\left(1+\frac{1}{m}\right) m^{1 /(m+1)} C^{1 /(m+1)}, \quad 0<x<+\infty .
\end{gathered}
$$

## Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\gamma}{8}(2-\gamma) \frac{F^{2}}{R^{2-\gamma}}+\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} R F \\
&=\frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha F}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)}\left[R+\frac{2 n(n-1)(n+2)}{(n-2)^{2} \alpha} \gamma(2-\gamma) F \cdot \frac{1}{R^{2-\gamma}}\right] \\
& \geq \frac{(n-2)^{2} \alpha F}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)}\left(1+\frac{1}{2-\gamma}\right)(2-\gamma)^{1 /(3-\gamma)} \cdot F^{1 /(3-\gamma)} \\
& \quad \cdot\left[\frac{2 n(n-1)(n+2)}{(n-2)^{2} \alpha} \gamma(2-\gamma)\right]^{1 /(3-r)} \\
&=\frac{(n-2)^{2}(3-\gamma)}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)}\left[\frac{2 n(n-1)(n+2)}{(n-2)^{2}}\right]^{1 /(3-\gamma)} \\
& \quad \times \gamma^{1 /(3-\gamma)}(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} F^{(4-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting this into (43) yields, for $F>0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F \\
&-\frac{(n-2)^{2}(3-\gamma)}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)}\left[\frac{2 n(n-1)(n+2)}{(n-2)^{2}} \gamma\right]^{1 /(3-\gamma)} \\
& \times(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} F^{(4-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)}  \tag{44}\\
&+8 \alpha^{2} R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} \alpha \eta R^{4-\gamma}, \\
& 0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{align*}
$$

From Lemma 6.1 we know that for $0<\sigma \leq 1 /(2 n)$

$$
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \frac{\beta c_{1}(\sigma)}{(t+1)^{\sigma}} R^{2-\sigma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{gather*}
0 \leq S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2} \leq \frac{n^{2} \beta c_{1}(\sigma)}{(t+1)^{\sigma}} R^{2-\sigma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{45}\\
8 \alpha^{2} R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} \alpha \eta R^{4-\gamma} \\
\leq\left[8 \alpha n^{2} c_{1}(\sigma) \beta\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\sigma}-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} \eta R^{\sigma}\right] R^{4-\gamma-\sigma} \cdot \alpha \\
\leq 8 \alpha^{2} n^{2} \beta c_{1}(\sigma)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha} \\
\cdot\left[\frac{128 n^{3}(n-1)(n+2) \alpha \cdot \beta c_{1}(\sigma)}{(n-2)^{2} \eta}\right]^{(4-\gamma) / \sigma-1}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{4-\gamma-\sigma} \\
\leq 8 n^{2} c_{1}(\sigma)\left[\frac{128 n^{3}(n-1)(n+2) c_{1}(\sigma)}{(n-2)^{2}}\right]^{(4-\gamma) / \sigma-1} \\
\cdot \alpha \cdot \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{(4-\gamma) / \sigma}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{4-\gamma} .
\end{gather*}
$$

Let $\sigma=1 / 2 n$. Then

$$
\begin{gather*}
8 \alpha^{2} R^{2-\gamma}\left(S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}\right)-\frac{(n-2)^{2}}{16 n(n-1)(n+2)} \alpha \eta R^{4-\gamma} \\
\leq c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right) \alpha \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{2 n(4-\gamma)}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{4-\gamma} \tag{46}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $c_{0}$ is the constant in (1).
Substituting (46) into (44), we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} F \\
& -c_{4}(n)(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} F^{(4-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)}  \tag{47}\\
& +c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right) \alpha \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{2 n(4-\gamma)}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{4-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(x, t)=F(x, t) t^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{48}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq \Delta w+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} w \\
&-c_{4}(n)(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} w^{(4-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} \cdot\left(\frac{1}{t}\right) \\
&+c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right) \alpha \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{2 n(4-\gamma)} \frac{1}{t}\left(\frac{t}{t+1}\right)^{4-\gamma}+\frac{(3-\gamma)}{t} w, \\
& \frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq \Delta w+\frac{\gamma}{R} \nabla_{k} R \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{2}} w \\
&+\frac{w}{t}\left[(3-\gamma)+\frac{c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right)}{w} \alpha \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{2 n(4-\gamma)}\right. \\
&\left.\quad c_{4}(n)(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} w^{1 /(3-\gamma)}\right] \\
& \text { for } w>0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

From (48) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(x, 0) \equiv 0 \tag{50}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore, in consequence of Theorem 4.12, that

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(x, t) \leq y_{0} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, \infty) \tag{51}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y_{0}>0$ is the root of

$$
\begin{align*}
(3-\gamma) & +\frac{c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right)}{y_{0}} \alpha \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{2 n(4-\gamma)}  \tag{52}\\
& -c_{4}(n)(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} y_{0}^{1 /(3-\gamma)}=0 .
\end{align*}
$$

Now if we fix $\gamma$ such that (28) holds and let

$$
\alpha=(1 / \beta)^{1 / 3}, \quad \eta=\beta^{1 / 3}, \quad y_{1}=\beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4}
$$

then

$$
\begin{aligned}
(3-\gamma) & +\frac{c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right)}{y_{1}} \alpha \eta\left(\frac{\alpha \beta}{\eta}\right)^{2 n(4-\gamma)} \\
& -c_{4}(n)(2-\gamma)^{(\gamma-1) /(3-\gamma)} \alpha^{(2-\gamma) /(3-\gamma)} y_{1}^{1 /(3-\gamma)} \\
= & (3-\gamma)+c_{3}\left(n, c_{0}\right) \beta^{2 n(4-\gamma) / 3-2 / 3-(2-\gamma) / 4} \\
& -c_{5}(n, \gamma)\left(\frac{1}{\beta}\right)^{(2-\gamma) / 12(3-\gamma)}<0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $\beta>0$ is small enough, we have

$$
y_{0} \leq y_{1}=\beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4} .
$$

Thus there exists a constant $c_{6}=c_{6}\left(n, c_{0}, \gamma\right)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(x, t) \leq \beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4} \quad \text { if } 0<\beta \leq c_{6} \tag{53}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the definition of $w(x, t)$ we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t) \leq \beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4} / t^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{54}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also by definition we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t) \geq \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}}-\eta R^{3-\gamma} \tag{55}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (54) and (55) gives

$$
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}}{R^{\gamma}} \leq \eta R^{3-\gamma}+\beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4}\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<\infty
$$

Since $\eta=\beta^{1 / 3}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \beta^{1 / 3} R^{3}+\beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4} R^{\gamma}\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{56}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 6.3. Suppose $M$ is a complete noncompact Riemannian manifold of dimension $n$, and suppose there exists $\delta>0$ such that

$$
R_{i j} \geq \delta R g_{i j}>0 \quad \text { on } M
$$

Then there exists a constant $\eta_{0}=\eta_{0}(n, \delta)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta_{0}\left[\sup _{x \in M} R(x)\right]^{3} \leq \sup _{M}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \tag{57}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The proof of this lemma is analogous to that of Lemma 5.17.
Now we can prove the following scalar curvature decay theorem.
Theorem 6.4. There exist constants $\delta=\delta(n)>0$ depending only on $n$, and $c_{6}=c_{6}\left(n, c_{0}\right)>0$ depending only on $n$ and $c_{0}$, such that if $0<\beta \leq c_{6}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq C(n) \beta^{\delta} / t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{58}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C(n)>0$ depends only on $n$.
Proof. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{\max }(t)=\sup _{x \in M} R(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{59}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since from (3) we have

$$
0 \leq S-\frac{1}{n} R^{2}=\left|\stackrel{\circ}{R_{i j}}\right|^{2} \leq n^{2}|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq n^{2} \beta R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<\infty
$$

we can find $\tilde{c}_{6}>0$ depending only on $n$ such that if $0<\beta \leq \tilde{c}_{6}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j} \geq \frac{1}{2 n} R g_{i j}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{60}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Lemma 6.3 we can find a constant $\eta_{0}=\eta_{0}(n)>0$ such that

$$
\eta_{0} R_{\max }^{3} \leq \sup _{M}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2}
$$

From (56), if we fix $\gamma=\gamma(n)>0$ and let $c_{6}=c_{6}\left(n, c_{0}\right) \leq \tilde{c}_{6}$, then for $0<\beta \leq c_{6}$, we have

$$
\sup _{M}\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \beta^{1 / 3} R_{\max }^{3}+\beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4}\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma} R_{\max }^{\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

and therefore

$$
\eta_{0} R_{\max }^{3} \leq \beta^{1 / 3} R_{\max }^{3}+\beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4}\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma} R_{\max }^{\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

If $0<\beta \leq \min \left\{c_{6},\left(\eta_{0} / 2\right)^{3}\right\}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\eta_{0}-\beta^{1 / 3} & \geq \frac{\eta_{0}}{2} \\
\frac{\eta_{0}}{2} R_{\max }^{3} & \leq \beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4}\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma} R_{\max }^{\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus if $0<\beta \leq \min \left\{c_{6},\left(\eta_{0} / 2\right)^{3}\right\}$, then

$$
R_{\max }(t) \leq\left(\frac{2}{\eta_{0}}\right)^{1 /(3-\gamma)} \beta^{(2-\gamma) / 4(3-\gamma)} / t, \quad 0 \leq t<\infty .
$$

Let $C(n)=\left(2 / \eta_{0}\right)^{1 /(3-\gamma)}$ and $\delta=(2-\gamma) / 4(3-\gamma)>0$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq C(n) \beta^{\delta} / t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{61}
\end{equation*}
$$

Corollary 6.5. For $\delta>0$ and $c_{6}>0$ in Theorem 6.4, there exists $a$ constant $c_{7}=c_{7}\left(n, c_{0}, \beta\right)>0$ such that for $0<\beta \leq c_{6}$, we have

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
R(x, t) \leq \frac{C(n) \beta^{\delta}}{t+1}+\frac{c_{7}\left(n, c_{0}, \beta\right)}{(t+1)^{2}}, & 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
\left|\nabla_{i} R\right|^{2} \leq \frac{\tilde{C}(n) \beta^{3 \delta}}{(t+1) t^{2}}+\frac{c_{7}\left(n, c_{0}, \beta\right)}{(t+1)^{4}}, & 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{63}
\end{array}
$$

where $C(n)>0$ and $\tilde{C}(n)>0$ depend only on $n$.
Proof. (62) follows from Theorem 6.4 and (3), and (63) follows from (56) and (62).

Thus we know that as time $t \rightarrow \infty$, the scalar curvature $R(x, t)$ goes to zero in $t^{-1}$ order, but this is not enough; we need faster decay of the
scalar curvature than $t^{-1}$ to guarantee the convergence of the metric $g_{i j}(t)$ as time $t \rightarrow \infty$.

## 7. Decay of the controlling function

In this section we want to prove that the scalar curvature of $M$ actually decays in the order of $(1 / t)^{1+\theta}, \theta>0$, as time $t \rightarrow+\infty$, provided that $M$ satisfies all of the conditions stated in the Main Theorem.

We still use the notation of the last section. Suppose $M$ is an $n$ dimensional complete noncompact Riemannian manifold with metric $g_{i j}(x)$, the curvature of which satisfies the condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \beta R^{2}, \quad 0<R \leq c_{0} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\beta$ and $c_{0}$ are constants, and $0<\beta \leq \delta_{n} / 2 n(n-1)$.
From Corollary 6.5 we know that if $0<\beta \leq c_{6}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq \frac{C(n) \beta^{\delta}}{t+1}+\frac{c_{7}\left(n, c_{0}, \beta\right)}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varepsilon=C(n) \beta^{\delta}, \quad C(\varepsilon)=c_{7}\left(n, c_{0}, \beta\right) . \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq \frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{c(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose $u(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$ is a function satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R(x, 0) \leq u(x) \leq 2 R(x, 0) \quad \text { on } M . \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider the following equation on $M$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial u}{\partial t}=\Delta u+\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}, \\
& u(x, 0) \equiv u(x) . \tag{6}
\end{align*}
$$

From (5) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R(x, 0) \leq u(x, 0) \leq 2 R(x, 0) \leq 2 c_{0} . \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore by using some simple technique we can find a positive solution $u(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0,+\infty))$ of (6) such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<u(x, t) \leq c_{1}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0<c_{1}<+\infty$ is some constant.

Since $\partial R / \partial t=\Delta R+2 S$, from (6) of $\S 6$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t} \leq \Delta R+2 R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (6) implies

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(u-R) \geq & \Delta(u-R)+\left[2 R-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\right](u-R)  \tag{10}\\
& +\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \cdot\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}-R\right] u .
\end{align*}
$$

From (4) we get

$$
\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}-R \geq 0
$$

Since $u(x, t)>0$, we have

$$
\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}-R\right] u \geq 0
$$

which thus reduce (10) to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(u-R) \geq \Delta(u-R)+\left(2 R-\frac{u}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)(u-R) \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\psi(x, t)=u-R$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t} \geq \Delta \psi+Q(\psi, x, t) \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
Q(\psi, x, t)=\left(2 R-\frac{u}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)(u-R) .
$$

Furthermore, from (7) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x, 0) \geq 0 \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $u(x, t)>0$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x, t) \geq-R \geq-\tilde{C}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

By using (4)and (8) we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
|Q(\psi, x, t)| \leq\left(2 R+\frac{u}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \cdot|u-R| \leq\left(2 \tilde{C}+\frac{c_{1}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)|\psi| \\
|Q(\psi, x, t)| \leq\left(2 \tilde{C}+\frac{c_{1}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \cdot|\psi|, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
Q(\psi, x, t) \geq-\left(2 \tilde{C}+\frac{c_{1}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \cdot|\psi|, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{15}
\end{gather*}
$$

From (12), (13), (14), (15) and Theorem 4.6 it follows that

$$
\psi(x, t) \geq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq u(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(t)=\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right], \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}=\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(t)=\frac{\delta}{t+1}+\frac{c_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty, \tag{19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\delta>0$ and $c_{1}>0$ are two constants to be determined later. If we let

$$
w(x, t)=u(x, t)-\varphi(t)
$$

then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}= & \Delta w+P(t)[w+\varphi(t)]-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}[w+\varphi(t)]^{2}-\varphi^{\prime}(t) \\
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}= & \Delta w+\left[P(t)-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} w-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \varphi(t)\right] w+P(t) \varphi(t) \\
& -\frac{\varphi(t)^{2}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}-\varphi^{\prime}(t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{20}
\end{align*}
$$

From (19) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
&-\varphi^{\prime}(t)=\frac{\delta}{(t+1)^{2}}+\frac{2 c_{1}}{(t+1)^{3}}, \\
& P(t) \varphi(t)-\varphi^{\prime}(t)= \frac{\delta}{(t+1)^{2}}+\frac{2 c_{1}}{(t+1)^{3}} \\
&+\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right]\left[\frac{\delta}{t+1}+\frac{c_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] \\
&= {\left[\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \varepsilon \delta+\delta\right] \frac{1}{(t+1)^{2}}+\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \frac{C(\varepsilon) c_{1}}{(t+1)^{4}} } \\
&+\left[\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left(\varepsilon c_{1}+\delta C(\varepsilon)\right)+2 c_{1}\right] \frac{1}{(t+1)^{3}}, \\
& \frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \varphi(t)^{2}= \frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \frac{\delta^{2}}{(t+1)^{2}}+\frac{2 \delta c_{1}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \frac{1}{(t+1)^{3}}+\frac{c_{1}^{2}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \frac{1}{(t+1)^{4}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\delta=4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}$. If $c_{1}$ is large enough, then

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) \varepsilon \delta+\delta \leq \frac{\delta^{2}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \\
\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\varepsilon c_{1}+\delta C(\varepsilon)\right]+2 c_{1} \leq \frac{2 \delta c_{1}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \\
\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) C(\varepsilon) c_{1} \leq \frac{c_{1}^{2}}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}
\end{gathered}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
& P(t) \varphi(t)-\varphi^{\prime}(t) \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \varphi(t)^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<\infty, \\
& P(t) \varphi(t)-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \varphi(t)^{2}-\varphi^{\prime}(t) \leq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{21}
\end{align*}
$$

Substituting (21) into (20) yields

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq \Delta w+\left[P(t)-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} w-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \varphi(t)\right] w, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{22}\\
\varphi(t)=\frac{4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}}{t+1}+\frac{c_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{23}
\end{gather*}
$$

By definition of $w(x, t)$ we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
w(x, 0)=u(x, 0)-\varphi(0) \\
u(x, 0) \leq 2 R(x, 0) \leq 2 c_{0} \\
\varphi(0)=4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}+c_{1}
\end{gathered}
$$

and therefore

$$
w(x, 0) \leq 2 c_{0}-4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}-c_{1}
$$

If we choose $c_{1} \geq 2 c_{0}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(x, 0) \leq 0, \quad x \in M \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (8) and (23) it follows that there exists a constant $c_{2}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& 0<u(x, t) \leq c_{2}, \\
& 0<\varphi(t) \leq c_{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{25}
\end{align*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{gather*}
-c_{2} \leq w(x, t) \leq c_{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{26}\\
{\left[P(t)-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} w-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \varphi(t)\right] w \leq c_{3}|w|, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty} \tag{27}
\end{gather*}
$$

By means of (22), (24), (26), (27) and Theorem 4.6 we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
w(x, t) \leq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
u(x, t) \leq \varphi(t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{28}
\end{gather*}
$$

and finally the following:

$$
u(x, t) \leq \frac{4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}}{t+1}+\frac{c_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

Thus we have proved the following lemma.
Lemma 7.1. Suppose $u(x, t) \in C^{\infty}(M \times[0,+\infty))$ is the solution of equation (6). Then
(29) $0<R(x, t) \leq u(x, t) \leq \frac{4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}}{t+1}+\frac{c_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty$,
where $c_{1}=c_{1}\left(\varepsilon, c_{0}\right)>0$ depends only on $\varepsilon$ and $c_{0}$.
Since

$$
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}=\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty,
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t} & =\left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}\right)_{i}=\left[\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}\right]_{i} \\
& =u_{k k i}+P(t) u_{i}-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u u_{i} \\
& =u_{i k k}-R_{i k} u_{k}+P(t) u_{i}-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u u_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $u_{i}=\nabla_{i} u$ is the covariant derivative,

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t}=\Delta u_{i}-R_{i k} u_{k}+P(t) u_{i}-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u u_{i}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty,  \tag{30}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}=\Delta\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}-2\left|u_{i j}\right|^{2}+2 R_{i j} u_{i} u_{j}-2 R_{i k} u_{i} u_{k} \\
+2 P(t)\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}-\frac{4}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}, \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}=\Delta\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}-2\left|u_{i j}\right|^{2}+2 P(t)\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}  \tag{31}\\
-\frac{4}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty, \\
\begin{array}{c}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{1}{u^{\gamma}}\right)=-\frac{\gamma}{u^{\gamma+1}} \frac{\partial u}{\partial t}=-\frac{\gamma}{u^{\gamma+1}}\left[\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}\right] \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{1}{u^{\gamma}}\right)=\Delta\left(\frac{1}{u^{\gamma}}\right)-\frac{\gamma(\gamma+1)}{u^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}-\frac{\gamma P(t)}{u^{\gamma}} \\
+\frac{\gamma}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{1-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{array}
\end{gather*}
$$

From (31) and (32) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}}\right)= & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}}\right)-2 \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{1}{u^{\gamma}}\right) \cdot \nabla_{k}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2} \\
& +\frac{\gamma}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{1-\gamma}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}+\left[2 P(t)-\frac{4}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\right] \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}} \\
& -\frac{2}{u^{\gamma}}\left|u_{i j}\right|^{2}-\frac{\gamma(\gamma+1)}{u^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{4}-\frac{\gamma P(t)}{u^{\gamma}}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $w(x, t)=\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2} / u^{\gamma}$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}= & \Delta w-2 \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{1}{u^{\gamma}}\right) \cdot \nabla_{k}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}-\frac{2}{u^{\gamma}}\left|u_{i j}\right|^{2}-\frac{\gamma(\gamma+1)}{u^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{4} \\
& +\left[2 P(t)-\frac{4}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u-\gamma P(t)+\frac{\gamma}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\right] w . \tag{33}
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -2 \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{1}{u^{\gamma}}\right) \nabla_{k}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}=\frac{4 \gamma}{u^{\gamma+1}} u_{i} u_{k} u_{i k} \\
& w_{k}=\nabla_{k} w=\frac{2 u_{i} u_{i k}}{u^{\gamma}}-\frac{\gamma}{u^{\gamma+1}}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2} u_{k} \\
& \frac{2 \gamma}{u^{\gamma+1}} u_{i} u_{k} u_{i k}=\frac{\gamma}{u} u_{k} w_{k}+\frac{\gamma^{2}}{u^{\gamma+2}}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{4}
\end{aligned}
$$

from (33) we have, for $0 \leq t<+\infty$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t}= & \Delta w+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{w^{2}}{u^{2-\gamma}} \\
& -\frac{2}{u^{\gamma}}\left|u_{i j}-\frac{\gamma}{2 u} u_{i} u_{j}\right|^{2}+\left[(2-\gamma) P(t)+\frac{\gamma-4}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\right] w . \tag{34}
\end{align*}
$$

Now let $0<\gamma<2$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right)>0, \quad \gamma-4<0 \tag{35}
\end{equation*}
$$

## From Lemma 7.1 we know that

$$
\begin{gathered}
-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{w^{2}}{u^{2}-\gamma} \leq-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma)\left[\frac{4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}}{t+1}+\frac{c_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}\right]^{\gamma-2} w^{2} \\
{\left[(2-\gamma) P(t)+\frac{\gamma-4}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\right] w \leq(2-\gamma) P(t) w}
\end{gathered}
$$

Substituting (17) and the above equations into (34) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(1-\frac{\gamma}{2}\right) \frac{w^{2}}{u^{2-\gamma}} \\
& -\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma)\left[4 \sqrt{\varepsilon}+\frac{c_{1}}{t+1}\right]^{\gamma-2}(t+1)^{2-\gamma} w^{2} \\
& +(2-\gamma)\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] w, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
\frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta w+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} w-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} w \\
& \quad-c_{2}(\gamma, \varepsilon)(t+1)^{2-\gamma} w^{2}+\frac{c_{3}(\gamma, \varepsilon)}{(t+1)} w, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
F(x, t)=w(x, t) \cdot t=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}} t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
$$

Then from (36) we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} F \\
-c_{2}(\gamma, \varepsilon)(t+1)^{2-\gamma} \frac{F^{2}}{t}+\frac{c_{3}(\gamma, \varepsilon)}{(t+1)} F+\frac{F}{t}, \\
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} F \\
+\frac{F}{t}\left[1+c_{3}(\gamma, \varepsilon)\left(\frac{t}{t+1}\right)-c_{2}(\gamma, \varepsilon)(t+1)^{2-\gamma} F\right],  \tag{37}\\
0 \leq t<+\infty .
\end{gather*}
$$

By the definition of $F$ we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, 0) \equiv 0 \tag{38}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (37) and Theorem 4.12 implies

$$
F(x, t) \leq c_{4}(\gamma, \varepsilon), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
$$

Thus if $0<\gamma<2$, then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}} \leq \frac{c_{4}(\gamma, \varepsilon)}{t}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
H(x, t)=w(x, t) t^{3-\gamma}=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}} t^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
$$

Then from (36) it follows that, for $0 \leq t<+\infty$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial H}{\partial t} \leq \Delta H+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} H-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} H \\
& \quad-c_{2}(\gamma, \varepsilon)(t+1)^{2-\gamma} H^{2}\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma}+\frac{c_{3}(\gamma, \varepsilon)}{(t+1)} H+\frac{3-\gamma}{t} H, \\
& \frac{\partial H}{\partial t} \Delta H+\frac{\gamma}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k} H-\frac{\gamma}{4}(2-\gamma) \frac{\left|\nabla_{k} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} H \\
& +\frac{H}{t}\left[(3-\gamma)+c_{3}(\gamma, \varepsilon)\left(\frac{t}{t+1}\right)-c_{2}(\gamma, \varepsilon)\left(\frac{t+1}{t}\right)^{2-\gamma} H\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

which together with Theorem 4.12 yields

$$
H(x, t) \leq c_{5}(\gamma, \varepsilon), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
$$

Thus if $0<\gamma<2$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}} \leq c_{5}(\gamma, \varepsilon)\left(\frac{1}{t}\right)^{3-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 7.2. For any $0<\gamma<2$, there exists a constant $c_{6}>0$ depending only on $\gamma$ and $\varepsilon$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{\gamma}} \leq \frac{c_{6}}{t}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{2-\gamma}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (42) follows from (39) and (41).
Now we prove the Harnack Inequality for the controlling function $u(x, t)$. We know that

$$
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}=\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty .
$$

Let $f(x, t)=\log u(x, t)$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} & =\Delta f+\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}+P(t)-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{43}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Delta f & =\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(g^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f\right)=\left(\frac{\partial g^{i j}}{\partial t}\right) \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f+g^{i j} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f  \tag{44}\\
& =2 R_{i j} f_{i j}+g^{i j} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f .
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f=\frac{\partial^{2} f}{\partial x^{i} \partial x^{j}}-\Gamma_{i j}^{k} \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^{k}}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f=\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j}\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial t}\right)-\frac{\partial \Gamma_{i j}^{k}}{\partial t} \nabla_{k} f \\
& g^{i j} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f=\Delta\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial t}\right)-g^{i j} f_{k} \frac{\partial \Gamma_{i j}^{k}}{\partial t}
\end{aligned}
$$

We have proved the following formula in §4:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \Gamma_{i j}^{k}}{\partial t}=g^{k m}\left(\nabla_{m} R_{i j}-\nabla_{i} R_{j m}-\nabla_{j} R_{i m}\right) \tag{45}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with the Bianchi identity implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{i j} \frac{\partial \Gamma_{i j}^{k}}{\partial t}=0 \quad \text { for any } k \tag{46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore

$$
g^{i j} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} f=\Delta\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial t}\right)
$$

Substituting this into (44), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Delta f= & 2 R_{i j} f_{i j}+\Delta\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial t}\right) \\
= & 2 R_{i j} f_{i j}+\Delta\left[\Delta f+\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}+P(t)-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\right] \\
& =\Delta(\Delta f)+2 \nabla_{i} f \cdot \nabla_{i}(\Delta f)+2 f_{i j}^{2}+2 R_{i j} f_{i} f_{j} \\
& -\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \Delta u+2 R_{i j} f_{i j}
\end{aligned}
$$

the last step comes from

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2} & =\left(\sum f_{i}^{2}\right)_{k k}=\left(2 f_{i} f_{i k}\right)_{k}=2 f_{i k}^{2}+2 f_{i} f_{i k k} \\
& =2 f_{i j}^{2}+2 f_{k k i} f_{i}+2 R_{i k} f_{i} f_{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

where we have used the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{i k k}=f_{k k i}+R_{i k} f_{k} \tag{47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\Delta f)= & \Delta(\Delta f)+2 \nabla_{i} f \cdot \nabla_{i}(\Delta f)+2 f_{i j}^{2}+2 R_{i j} f_{i j}  \tag{48}\\
& +2 R_{i j} f_{i} f_{j}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} \Delta u, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta f=\Delta \log u=\frac{\Delta u}{u}-\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} \tag{49}
\end{equation*}
$$

we have

$$
\Delta u=u \Delta f+u\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}
$$

and therefore (48) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\Delta f)= & \Delta(\Delta f)+2 \nabla_{i} f \cdot \nabla_{i}(\Delta f)+2 f_{i j}^{2}+2 R_{i j} f_{i j} \\
& +2 R_{i j} f_{i} f_{j}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u \Delta f-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2} \tag{50}
\end{align*}
$$

From (60) of $\S 6$ it follows that $R_{i j}>0$, so that

$$
\begin{gather*}
2 R_{i j} f_{i} f_{j} \geq 0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{51}\\
\left|2 R_{i j} f_{i j}\right| \leq\left|R_{i j}\right|^{2}+f_{i j}^{2}=S+f_{i j}^{2}
\end{gather*}
$$

Since $\frac{1}{n} R^{2} \leq S \leq R^{2}$, from Lemma 7.1 we know that $R \leq u, S \leq R^{2} \leq u^{2}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|2 R_{i j} f_{i j}\right| \leq u^{2}+f_{i j}^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{52}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (50), (51), and (52) gives
(53) $\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\Delta f) \geq \Delta(\Delta f)+2 \nabla_{i} f \cdot \nabla_{i}(\Delta f)+f_{i j}^{2}-u^{2}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u \Delta f-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}$.

On the other hand, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{i j}^{2} \geq \frac{1}{n}\left(\sum f_{i i}\right)^{2}=\frac{1}{n}(\Delta f)^{2}  \tag{54}\\
& \left|-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u \Delta f\right| \leq \frac{1}{4 n}(\Delta f)^{2}+\frac{n}{\varepsilon} u^{2} \tag{55}
\end{align*}
$$

Substituting (54) and (55) into (53) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\Delta f) \geq & \Delta(\Delta f)+2 \nabla_{i} f \cdot \nabla_{i}(\Delta f)+\frac{1}{2} f_{i j}^{2}+\frac{1}{4 n}(\Delta f)^{2} \\
& -\left(1+\frac{n}{\varepsilon}\right) u^{2}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{56}
\end{align*}
$$

From Lemma 7.2 we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \leq u\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}=\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u} \leq \frac{c_{6}(\varepsilon)}{t}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{57}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (57) in (56), and using Lemma 7.1 we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(\Delta f) \geq \Delta(\Delta f)+2 \nabla_{i} f \cdot \nabla_{i}(\Delta f)+\frac{1}{2} f_{i j}^{2}+\frac{1}{4 n}(\Delta f)^{2} \\
-\frac{c_{7}(\varepsilon)}{t}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{58}
\end{gather*}
$$

On the other hand, from (34) it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}}\right)= & \Delta\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}}\right)+\frac{2}{u} \nabla_{k} u \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}}\right) \\
& -\frac{2}{u^{2}}\left|u_{i j}-\frac{1}{u} u_{i} u_{j}\right|^{2}-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u}\right) \tag{59}
\end{align*}
$$

Recalling that $f=\log u$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}= & \Delta\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}+2 \nabla_{k} f \cdot \nabla_{k}\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2} \\
& -2 f_{i j}^{2}-\frac{2}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{60}
\end{align*}
$$

Suppose $0<\alpha<\frac{1}{4}$ is a constant. By (58) and (60) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right) \geq & \Delta\left(\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right)+2 \nabla_{k} f \cdot \nabla_{k}\left(\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right) \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{2}-2 \alpha\right) f_{i j}^{2}+\frac{1}{4 n}(\Delta f)^{2}-\frac{2 \alpha}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\left(\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u}\right)  \tag{61}\\
& -\frac{c_{7}(\varepsilon)}{t}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Since $0<\alpha<\frac{1}{4}$, we have $\frac{1}{2}-2 \alpha \geq 0$, and, in consequence of (61) and Lemma 7.2,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right] \geq & \Delta\left[\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right]
\end{aligned}+2 \nabla_{k} f \cdot \nabla_{k}\left[\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right] ~ 子 \begin{aligned}
& +\frac{1}{4 n}\left[\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right]^{2}-\frac{\alpha}{2 n}\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\left[\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right] \\
& -\frac{c_{8}(\varepsilon)}{t}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{62}
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t)=\left[\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}\right] t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{63}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \geq & \Delta F+2 \nabla_{k} f \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\alpha}{2 n}\left|\nabla_{k} f\right|^{2} F+\frac{1}{4 n t} F^{2} \\
& -c_{8}(\varepsilon)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)+\frac{F}{t}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \geq & \Delta F+2 \nabla_{k} f \cdot \nabla_{k} F-\frac{\alpha}{2 n}\left|\nabla_{k} f\right|^{2} F \\
& +\frac{F}{t}\left[1-c_{8}\left(\frac{t}{t+1}\right) \frac{1}{F}+\frac{F}{4 n}\right] \tag{64}
\end{align*}
$$

By the definition of $F$ we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, 0) \equiv 0 \tag{65}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (64), (65) and Theorem 4.12 it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t) \geq-c_{9}(\varepsilon), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{66}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $c_{9}(\varepsilon)$ is a constant independent of $\alpha$. Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta f+\alpha\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2} \geq-c_{9}(\varepsilon) / t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty, \tag{67}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $0<\alpha<\frac{1}{4}$, and letting $\alpha \rightarrow 0$ we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
\Delta f \geq-c_{9}(\varepsilon) / t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty,  \tag{68}\\
\frac{\Delta u}{u}-\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}} \geq-c_{9}(\varepsilon) / t, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{69}
\end{gather*}
$$

Lemma 7.3. There exists a constant $c_{10}(\varepsilon)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}}-\frac{1}{u} \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} \leq \frac{c_{10}(\varepsilon)}{t}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{70}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Denote $u_{t}=\partial u / \partial t$. Then

$$
\begin{gather*}
u_{t}=\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}, \\
-\frac{u_{t}}{u}=-\frac{\Delta u}{u}-P(t)+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u \leq-\frac{\Delta u}{u}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u, \\
\frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}}-\frac{u_{t}}{u} \leq \frac{\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2}}{u^{2}}-\frac{\Delta u}{u}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{71}
\end{gather*}
$$

The lemma now follows from Lemma 7.1 and (69).
Now we state the Harnack inequality for the controlling function $u$.
Lemma 7.4. For any $x, y \in M$ and $0<t_{1}<t_{2}<+\infty$, we have

$$
u\left(x, t_{1}\right) \leq u\left(y, t_{2}\right)\left(\frac{t_{2}}{t_{1}}\right)^{c_{10}} \exp \left[\frac{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y)}{4\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)}\right],
$$

where we use $\gamma_{t}(x, y)$ to denote the distance between $x$ and $y$ with respect to the metric $g_{i j}(t)$.

Proof. Suppose $\gamma(S):[0,1] \rightarrow M$ is a geodesic with respect to the metric $g_{i j}(0)$ such that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\dot{\gamma}(S) \equiv \gamma_{0}(x, y), \quad 0 \leq S \leq 1, \\
\gamma(0)=y, \quad \gamma(1)=x .
\end{gathered}
$$

Define

$$
\varphi(s)=f\left(\gamma(s), t_{1} s+t_{2}(1-s)\right), \quad 0 \leq s \leq 1
$$

where $f(x, t)=\log u(x, t)$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
f\left(x, t_{1}\right)-f\left(y, t_{2}\right) & =\varphi(1)-\varphi(0)=\int_{0}^{1} \varphi^{\prime}(s) d s \\
& =\int_{0}^{1}\left[\nabla_{i}^{0} f \cdot \nabla_{i}^{0} \gamma-\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right) f_{t}\right] d s \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{1}\left[\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \gamma\right| \cdot\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} f\right|-\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right) f_{t}\right] d s,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\nabla^{0}$ denotes the covariant derivative with respect to $g_{i j}(0)$.


Since

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} y\right| & =\gamma_{0}(x, y), \quad\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} f\right| \leq\left|\nabla_{i} f\right| \\
f\left(x, t_{1}\right)-f\left(y, t_{2}\right) & \leq \int_{0}^{1}\left[\gamma_{0}(x, y)\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|-\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right) \frac{u_{t}}{u}\right] d s \tag{72}
\end{align*}
$$

from Lemma 7.3 it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{u_{t}}{u} \leq \frac{c_{10}}{t}-\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2} \tag{73}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
f\left(x, t_{1}\right)-f\left(y, t_{2}\right) & \leq \int_{0}^{1}\left[\gamma_{0}(x, y)\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|-\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)\left|\nabla_{i} f\right|^{2}+\frac{c_{10}}{t}\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)\right] d s \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{1}\left[\frac{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y)}{4\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)}+\frac{c_{10}}{t}\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)\right] d s \\
& =\frac{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y)}{4\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)}+c_{10} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \frac{d t}{t}=\frac{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y)}{4\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)}+c_{10} \log \frac{t_{2}}{t_{1}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore we have

$$
u\left(x, t_{1}\right) \leq u\left(y, t_{2}\right)\left(\frac{t_{2}}{t_{1}}\right)^{c_{10}} \exp \left\{\frac{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y)}{4\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)}\right\}
$$

As soon as we prove the Harnack Inequality for the function $u(x, t)$, we can control $u(x, t)$ better than we did in Lemma 7.1; of course we need extra conditions on the initial data $u(x, 0)$. As a first step we prove the following lemma.

Lemma 7.5. Under the assumptions of the Main Theorem stated in $\S 1$, for any $0<T<+\infty$, we can find a constant $C(T)>0$ such that

$$
0<u(x, t) \leq \frac{C(T)}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Proof. In (7) we assumed

$$
R(x, 0) \leq u(x, 0) \leq 2 R(x, 0)
$$

and condition (B) in the Main Theorem implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<u(x, 0) \leq 2 R(x, 0) \leq \frac{\tilde{c}_{2}}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} \tag{74}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose $\zeta(x) \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$ is the cut-off function defined in (102) of $\S 4$, and let

$$
\psi(x)=\int_{M} \zeta\left(\frac{\gamma_{0}(x, y)}{64 \sqrt{k_{0}}}\right) \frac{d y}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, y\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} / \int_{M} \zeta\left(\frac{\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, y\right)}{64 \sqrt{k_{0}}}\right) d y
$$

Then, similar to the proof of Lemma 4.2, we know that $\psi(x) \in C^{\infty}(M)$, $\psi(x)>0$, and we can find constants $\tilde{c}_{3}, \tilde{c}_{4}, \tilde{c}_{5}>0$ such that, for $\forall x \in M$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\tilde{c}_{3}}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} \leq \psi(x) \leq \frac{\tilde{c}_{4}}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} \\
& \left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \psi(x)\right| \leq \tilde{c}_{5} \psi(x), \quad\left|\nabla_{i}^{0} \nabla_{j}^{0} \psi(x)\right| \leq \tilde{c}_{5} \psi(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, similar to the proof of Lemma 4.3, we can show that

$$
\Delta_{t} \psi(x) \leq \tilde{c}_{6}(T) \psi(x), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T, x \in M
$$

Now define

$$
\varphi(x, t)=\frac{\tilde{c}_{2}}{\tilde{c}_{3}} e^{\tilde{c}_{6} t} \psi(x) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Then from (74) we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
0<u(x, 0) \leq \varphi(x, 0) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\tilde{c}_{6} \varphi \geq \Delta_{t} \varphi \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] .
\end{gathered}
$$

Thus we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
u(x, 0) \leq \varphi(x, 0) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t} \geq \Delta \varphi \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]  \tag{75}\\
\varphi(x, t) \leq \frac{\tilde{c}_{2} \tilde{c}_{4} \tilde{c}_{3}^{-1}}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} e^{\tilde{c}_{6} T} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
\end{gather*}
$$

By (18) we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} \leq \Delta u+P(t) u \leq \Delta u+\tilde{c}_{7} u  \tag{76}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(e^{-\tilde{c}_{7} t} u\right) \leq \Delta\left(e^{-\tilde{c}_{7} t} u\right)
\end{gather*}
$$

Define

$$
w(x, t)=\varphi(x, t)-e^{-\tilde{c}_{\mathfrak{c}} t} u(x, t)
$$

Then from (75) and (76) it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial w}{\partial t} \geq \Delta w \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T] \\
& w(x, 0) \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M
\end{aligned}
$$

By using Lemmas 7.1 and 4.5 we know respectively that

$$
w(x, t) \geq-u(x, t) \geq-\tilde{c}_{8} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

and that

$$
w(x, t) \geq 0 \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

so that

$$
u(x, t) \leq e^{\tilde{\tau}_{7} t} \varphi(x, t) \leq e^{\tilde{c}_{7} T} \varphi(x, t) \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

Thus we get

$$
u(x, t) \leq \frac{\tilde{c}_{9}(T)}{\left[1+\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)\right]^{2+\delta}} \quad \text { on } M \times[0, T]
$$

from (75), and $u(x, t)>0$ from Lemma 7.1. Hence the proof of Lemma 7.5 is complete.

Lemma 7.6. Under the assumptions of the Main Theorem, suppose $\varepsilon_{1}>$ 0 and $u(x, 0)$ satisfies

$$
\int_{M} u(x, 0)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v_{0} \leq c_{2}<+\infty
$$

If the constant $\varepsilon>0$ in (29) is small enough, then we can find a constant $c_{3}=c_{3}\left(\varepsilon_{1}, \varepsilon, c_{2}\right)>0$ such that

$$
u(x, t) \leq c_{3}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1} / 2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

Proof. Suppose $d v_{t}$ is the volume element of the metric $g_{i j}(t)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
d v_{t}=\sqrt{\operatorname{det}\left(g_{i j}(t)\right)} d x^{1} \wedge d x^{2} \wedge \cdots \wedge d x^{n} \tag{77}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is easy to show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} d v_{t}=-R d v_{t} \tag{78}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{M} u(x, t)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \\
&=\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}-1} \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} d v+\int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} d v \\
&=-\int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} R d v \\
&+\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}-1}\left[\Delta u+P(t) u-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}} u^{2}\right] d v \\
& \leq\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}-1}[\Delta u+P(t) u] d v \\
&=\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right) P(t) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \\
&-\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right)\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}-1\right) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}-2}\left|\nabla_{i} u\right|^{2} d v \\
& \quad \leq\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right) P(t) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v
\end{aligned}
$$

Because of Lemmas 7.2 and 7.5 we can integrate by parts on the whole complete manifold $M$. Thus we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \leq \frac{n}{2} P(t) \int_{M} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \tag{79}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{gather*}
\int_{M_{t}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \leq e^{(n / 2) \int_{0}^{t} P(t) d t} \int_{M_{0}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v_{0} \\
\int_{M_{t}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \leq c_{2} e^{\int_{0}^{t}(n / 2) P(t) d t}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{80}
\end{gather*}
$$

Moreover, by definition we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
P(t)=\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right)\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] \\
\int_{0}^{t} P(t) d t=(2 \varepsilon+\sqrt{\varepsilon}) \log (t+1)+\left(2+\frac{1}{\sqrt{\varepsilon}}\right) C(\varepsilon)\left[1-\frac{1}{t+1}\right]
\end{gathered}
$$

If $\varepsilon$ is small enough, then

$$
\frac{n}{2} \int_{0}^{t} P(t) d t \leq \tilde{C}(\varepsilon)+n \sqrt{\varepsilon} \log (t+1)
$$

and, in consequence of (80),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M_{t}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \leq c_{4}(\varepsilon)(t+1)^{n \sqrt{\varepsilon}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{81}
\end{equation*}
$$

For fixed $t$, we can find a point $x \in M$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2} \sup _{M_{t}} u \leq u(x, t) \leq \sup _{M_{t}} u \tag{82}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sup _{M_{i}}=\sup _{y \in M} u(y, t)$.
Let $\tau=2 t$ and $t \geq 1$. If $\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y) \leq t$, then from Lemma 7.4 we have $u(x, t) \leq c_{5} u(y, \tau)$. Thus we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M_{\tau}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v & \geq \int_{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y) \leq t} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}}(y, \tau) d v_{\tau}(y) \\
& \geq c_{6} \int_{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y) \leq t} u(x, t)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v_{\tau}(y) \\
& \geq c_{6} u(x, t)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} \int_{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y) \leq t} d v_{\tau}(y)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $A=\left\{y \in M \mid \gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y) \leq t\right\}$. Then, using (4),

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{M_{\tau}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \geq c_{6} u(x, t)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} \int_{A} d v_{\tau}  \tag{83}\\
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{A} d v_{t}=\int_{A} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} d v_{t}=-\int_{A} R d v_{t} \\
& \geq-\int_{A}\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{(t+1)}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] d v_{t}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{A} d v_{t} \geq-\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] \int_{A} d v_{t}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{84}\\
\int_{A} d v_{t} \geq\left(\int_{A} d v_{0}\right) \exp \left\{-\int_{0}^{t}\left[\frac{\varepsilon}{t+1}+\frac{C(\varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}\right] d t\right\}, \\
\int_{A} d v_{t} \geq \frac{c_{7}}{(t+1)^{\varepsilon}} \int_{A} d v_{0}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{85}
\end{gather*}
$$

By condition (A) in the Main Theorem, we have

$$
\int_{A} d v_{0}=\int_{\gamma_{0}^{2}(x, y) \leq t} d v_{0}(y) \geq C \gamma_{0}^{n} \geq C(t+1)^{n / 2}
$$

Since we assume $t \geq 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{A} d v_{0} \geq C(t+1)^{n / 2} \tag{86}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (85) implies

$$
\int_{A} d v_{\tau} \geq c_{8}(t+1)^{n / 2}(\tau+1)^{-\varepsilon}
$$

Since $\tau=2 t$,

$$
\int_{A} d v_{\tau} \geq c_{9}(t+1)^{n / 2-\varepsilon}
$$

Substituting this into (83) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M_{\tau}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \geq c_{10}(t+1)^{n / 2-\varepsilon} u(x, t)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} \tag{87}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, from (81) it follows that

$$
\int_{M_{\tau}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \leq c_{4}(\tau+1)^{n \sqrt{\varepsilon}} .
$$

Using $\tau=2 t$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M_{\tau}} u^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} d v \leq \tilde{c}_{4}(t+1)^{n \sqrt{\varepsilon}} \tag{88}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (87) gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& c_{10}(t+1)^{n / 2-\varepsilon} u(x, t)^{n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}} \leq \tilde{c}_{4}(t+1)^{n \sqrt{\varepsilon}}, \\
& u(x, t) \leq c_{11}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\left[n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}\right]^{-1}[n / 2-\varepsilon-n \sqrt{\varepsilon}]} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover, from (82) we get

$$
\sup _{x \in M} u(x, t) \leq c_{12}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\left[n / 2-\varepsilon_{1}\right]^{-1}[n / 2-\varepsilon-n \sqrt{\varepsilon}]}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty,
$$

if $\varepsilon>0$ is small enough, then

$$
\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon_{1}\right)^{-1} \cdot\left(\frac{n}{2}-\varepsilon-n \sqrt{\varepsilon}\right) \geq 1+\frac{\varepsilon_{1}}{2}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t) \leq C\left(\varepsilon_{1}, \varepsilon\right)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1} / 2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{89}
\end{equation*}
$$

which completes the proof of Lemma 7.6.
Now we state the main result of this section.

Theorem 7.7. Under the same hypotheses as in the Main Theorem, if we let

$$
\varepsilon_{1}=\frac{n \delta}{8(2+\delta)}>0
$$

then there exists a constant $c_{3}>0$ depending only on $n, \varepsilon, \delta, c_{1}$, and $c_{2}$ such that if $\varepsilon>0$ in condition $(\mathrm{B})$ of the main theorem is small enough, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq c_{3}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{90}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By condition (B) of the Main Theorem, we have

$$
0<R(x, 0) \leq \frac{c_{2}}{\gamma_{0}\left(x_{0}, x\right)^{2+\delta}} \quad \forall x \in M .
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} R(x, 0)^{n / 2-2 \varepsilon_{1}} d v_{0} \leq \tilde{C}<+\infty \tag{91}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (7) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} u(x, 0)^{n / 2-2 \varepsilon_{1}} d v_{0} \leq C<+\infty \tag{92}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, by Corollary 6.5 there exists a fixed $\eta>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(x, t) \leq \frac{C(n) \varepsilon^{\eta}}{t+1}+\frac{C(n, \varepsilon)}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty . \tag{93}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Lemma 7.1 it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<u(x, t) \leq \frac{4 \sqrt{C(n)} \varepsilon^{\eta / 2}}{t+1}+\frac{\tilde{c}_{1}}{(t+1)^{2}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{94}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, if $\varepsilon>0$ is small enough, by (92), (94) and Lemma 7.6 we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t) \leq c_{3}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{95}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since from Lemma 7.1

$$
0<R(x, t) \leq u(x, t), \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty,
$$

we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<R(x, t) \leq c_{3}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{96}
\end{equation*}
$$

which completes the proof of the theorem.

## 8. Higher derivatives of the curvature tensor

In this section we are going to control the higher derivatives of the curvature tensor $R_{i j k l}$.

Theorem 8.1. Under the same hypotheses as in the Main Theorem, if we let

$$
\varepsilon_{1}=\frac{n \delta}{8(2+\delta)}>0
$$

then for any fixed $\eta>0$ and any integer $m \geq 0$, there exist constants $c_{m}(\eta)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq c_{m}(\eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{2+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. From Theorem 7.7 and Corollary 5.8 we know respectively that

$$
0<R \leq C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

and that

$$
|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2} \leq \varepsilon R^{2}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

Thus

$$
|\mathrm{Rm}|^{2}=|\stackrel{\circ}{\mathrm{R}} \mathrm{~m}|^{2}+\frac{2}{n(n-1)} R^{2} \leq\left(\varepsilon+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right) R^{2}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{gather*}
|\mathrm{Rm}|^{2} \leq C\left(\varepsilon+\frac{2}{n(n-1)}\right)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{2+2 \varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \\
\left|R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq c_{0}\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{2+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{2}
\end{gather*}
$$

Hence in the case $m=0$ the theorem is true. Now we prove the theorem by induction. Suppose we already have the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla^{S} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq C_{s}(\eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{2+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $s=0,1,2, \cdots, m$.
Now suppose $s=m+1$. From Lemma 3.2 we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}= & \Delta\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}-2\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& +\sum_{i+j=m} \nabla^{i} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\alpha=2+\varepsilon_{1}$ and let $a$ be a constant to be determined later. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}[a+ & \left.+(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right] \\
& =\Delta\left[a+(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right]-2(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& +(t+1)^{\alpha} \sum_{i+j=m} \nabla^{i} \operatorname{Rm} * \nabla^{j} R m * \nabla^{m} R \mathrm{~m}  \tag{4}\\
& +\alpha(t+1)^{\alpha-1}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
\varphi(x, t)=a+(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}
$$

Using the induction hypothesis

$$
\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq C_{m}(\eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
$$

we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
a \leq \varphi(x, t) \leq a+C_{m}(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty,  \tag{5}\\
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}=\Delta \varphi-2(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\alpha(t+1)^{\alpha-1}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
+(t+1)^{\alpha} \sum_{i+j=m} \nabla^{i} R m * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm},  \tag{6}\\
\alpha(t+1)^{\alpha-1}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq \frac{\alpha C_{m}(\eta)}{(t+1)}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty,
\end{gather*}
$$

$$
(t+1)^{\alpha} \sum_{i+j=m} \nabla^{i} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm} \leq C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
$$

Thus from (6) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t} \leq \Delta \varphi-2(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\frac{C}{(t+1)}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0<C<+\infty$ is some constant. From Lemma 3.2 it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}= & \Delta\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}-2\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& +\sum_{i+j=m+1} \nabla^{i} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m+1} \mathrm{Rm} \tag{8}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the induction hypothesis (3) again we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{i+j=m+1} \nabla^{i} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{j} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m+1} \mathrm{Rm} \leq & C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& +C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{3 \alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting this into (8) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq \Delta\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}-2\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& \\
& +C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{3 \alpha / 2} \\
& \begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right] \leq & \Delta\left[(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right]
\end{aligned} \\
& \\
& \quad-2(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& \\
& \\
& +C(t+1)^{\alpha / 2}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& \\
& \\
& +C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}+\alpha(t+1)^{\alpha-1}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\psi(x, t)=(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}$. Then

$$
\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t} \leq \Delta \psi-2(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+C(t+1)^{\alpha-1}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
+C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t} \leq \Delta \psi-2(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\frac{C}{(t+1)} \psi+C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}
$$

$$
\eta \leq t<+\infty
$$

Now define $F(x, t)=\varphi(x, t) \psi(x, t)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, t)=(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\left[a+(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right] . \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (6) and (9) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F-2 \nabla_{p} \varphi \cdot \nabla_{p} \psi-2(t+1)^{2 \alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{4} \\
& +\frac{C}{(t+1)} \psi-2(t+1)^{\alpha} \varphi\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\frac{C}{(t+1)} \varphi \psi  \tag{11}\\
& +C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
\end{align*}
$$

Using (5) we have

$$
\frac{C}{(t+1)} \psi=\frac{C}{(t+1) \varphi} \varphi \psi \leq \frac{C}{a} \cdot \frac{F}{(t+1)}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty .
$$

From (11) and the definitions of $\varphi(x, t)$ and $\psi(x, t)$ we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F-2 \nabla_{p} \varphi \cdot \nabla_{p} \psi-2(t+1)^{2 \alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{4} \\
& -2(t+1)^{\alpha} \varphi\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\frac{C(a, \eta)}{(t+1)} F  \tag{12}\\
& +C(a, \eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty, \\
-2 \nabla_{p} \varphi \cdot \nabla_{p} \psi= & -2\left[(t+1)^{\alpha} \nabla_{p}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right]\left[(t+1)^{\alpha} \nabla_{p}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right] \\
= & -2(t+1)^{2 \alpha} \nabla_{p}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \cdot \nabla_{p}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
= & -8(t+1)^{2 \alpha} \nabla^{m} \mathrm{Rm}^{*} * \nabla^{m+1} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m+1} \mathrm{Rm} * \nabla^{m+2} \mathrm{Rm} \\
\leq & (t+1)^{2 \alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{4} \\
& +16(t+1)^{2 \alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

Using the induction hypothesis (3) we have

$$
(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq C_{m}(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
-2 \nabla_{p} \varphi \cdot \nabla_{p} \psi \leq & (t+1)^{2 \alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{4} \\
& +16 C_{m}(\eta)(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting this into (12) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F-(t+1)^{2 \alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{4}+16 C_{m}(\eta)(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& -2(t+1)^{\alpha} \varphi\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}+\frac{C(a, \eta)}{(t+1)} F \\
& +C(a, \eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \\
\frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq & \Delta F-\psi^{2}+\left[16 C_{m}(\eta)-2 \varphi\right](t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+2} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \\
& +\frac{C(a, \eta)}{(t+1)} F+C(a, \eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

But $a \leq \varphi \leq a+C_{m}(\eta)$; if we choose $a \geq 8 C_{m}(\eta)$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
& 16 C_{m}(\eta)-2 \varphi \leq 0, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \\
& \frac{\partial F}{\partial t} \leq \Delta F-\frac{F^{2}}{\left[a+C_{m}(\eta)\right]^{2}}+\frac{C(a, \eta)}{(t+1)} F \\
&+C(a, \eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{\alpha / 2}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \tag{13}
\end{align*}
$$

Obviously we can choose $\eta$ such that $0<\eta \leq \frac{1}{2} T_{0}$, where $T_{0}$ is the constant in Corollary 5.18. From Corollary 5.18 it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x, \eta) \leq \tilde{C}(\eta) \quad \forall x \in M \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, from (13), (14) and Theorem 4.12 we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
F(x, t) \leq C(\eta), \quad \eta & \leq t<+\infty, \\
{\left[a+(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2}\right](t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} } & \leq C(\eta), \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
(t+1)^{\alpha}\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq \frac{C(\eta)}{a}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty
$$

Since $\alpha=2+\varepsilon_{1}$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla^{m+1} R_{i j k l}\right|^{2} \leq C_{m+1}(\eta)\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{2+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad \eta \leq t<+\infty \tag{15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence the theorem is also true in the case $s=m+1$.
Proof of the Main Theorem. By the evolution equation

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}=-2 R_{i j}
$$

$R_{i j}>0$ for all time $0 \leq t<+\infty$, and

$$
0<R_{i j}<R g_{i j}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{gather*}
0>\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}>-2 R g_{i j}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty  \tag{16}\\
g_{i j}(x, 0) \geq g_{i j}(x, t) \geq g_{i j}(x, 0) e^{-2 \int_{0}^{t} R(x, t) d t}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{17}
\end{gather*}
$$

From Theorem 7.7 we have

$$
0<R(x, t) \leq C\left(\frac{1}{t+1}\right)^{1+\varepsilon_{1}}, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty, \varepsilon_{1}>0
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\int_{0}^{\infty} R(x, t) d t \leq \tilde{C}<+\infty \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore combining (16), (17) and (18) yields

$$
\begin{gather*}
g_{i j}(x, 0) \geq g_{i j}(x, t) \geq e^{-2 \tilde{C}} g_{i j}(x, 0) \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} g_{i j}(x, t)<0, \quad 0 \leq t<+\infty \tag{19}
\end{gather*}
$$

Thus there exists a metric $g_{i j}(x, \infty)>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{i j}(x, t) \xrightarrow{C^{0}} g_{i j}(x, \infty) \quad \text { as } t \rightarrow \infty \tag{20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since the curvature tensor actually is the second derivative of the metric, from Theorem 8.1 we know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i j k l}(x, \infty) \equiv 0, \quad x \in M \tag{21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore we still have

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{i j}(t) \xrightarrow{c^{\infty}} g_{i j}(\infty) \text { as time } t \rightarrow+\infty \tag{22}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence we complete the proof of the Main Theorem.
Acknowledgement. The author would like to thank Professors R. Hamilton and S. T. Yau for their help and encouragement.

## References

[1] D. G. Aronson, Uniqueness of positive weak solutions of the second order parabolic equations, Ann. Polon. Math. 16 (1985) 285-303.
[2] J. Cheeger \& D. Ebin, Comparison theorems in Riemannian geometry, North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1975.
[3] J. Cheeger \& D. Gromall, On the structure of complete manifolds of nonnegative curvature, Ann. of Math. (2) 96 (1972) 413-443.
[4] D. M. DeTurck, Deforming metrics in direction of their Ricci tensors, J. Differential Geometry 18 (1983) 157-162.
[5] H. Donnelly, Uniqueness of positive solutions of the heat equation, preprint.
[6] R. S. Hamilton, Three-manifolds with positive Ricci curvature, J. Differential Geometry 17 (1982) 255-306.
[7] __, Four-manifolds with positive curvature operator, J. Differential Geometry 24 (1986) 153-179.
[8] G. Huisken, Ricci deformation of the metric on a Riemannian manifold, J. Differential Geometry 21 (1985) 47-62.
[9] L. Karp \& P. Li, The heat equation on complete Riemannian manifold, preprint.
[10] P. Li \& S. T. Yau, On the parabolic kernel of the Schrödinger operator, Acta. Math. 156 (1986) 153-201.
[11] Murray H. Protter \& Hans F. Weinberger, Maximum principles in differential equations, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., 1967.
[12] W. Shi, Deforming the metric on complete Riemannian manifolds, J. Differential Geometry 30 (1989).

Harvard University


[^0]:    Received August 7, 1987.

